

The air immediately froze.

Ye Qingwu was rooted to the spot and she thought her ears were broken. What did Jiang Ning just say?

He wanted the notorious Su Mingquan to apologize to her? And she even got to choose how?

Was he...was he joking?!

Su Mingquan was equally stunned by this. He immediately used a finger to dig his ears, as if he had heard the most hilarious joke in the world.

"You want ME to apologize? You can go to hell!" Su Mingquan roared loudly. "Liu Xiaodao! Hack him to pieces!"

There weren't many people in Shenghai who dared to demand an apology from him, never mind someone like Jiang Ning who had just popped out from nowhere. What was this about apologizing to Ye Qingwu?

Jiang Ning must be tired of living!

On Su Mingquan's orders, Liu Xiaodao immediately waved a hand. "Attack!"

In an instant, a huge wave of men surrounded Jiang Ning. Their gaze was wary, but extremely aggressive.

"Tear his mouth off!" Su Mingquan laughed coldly. "Who the hell does he think he is? How dare he talk to me like that! Knock all his teeth out!"

The men rushed over immediately.

Jiang Ning stood where he was without moving. Ye Qingwu's face was already drained of color and her body trembled.

Swooooosh.

Swooooosh.

Brother Gou and Number 2 made their move!

This sort of trash didn't need Jiang Ning to throw them out personally!

Both of them were like furlous wolves since someone had dared to disrespect Jiang Ning! That itself deserved death!

BOOOM!

It was as if someone had planted explosives in the ground. The ground was cracked from their feet and they soon dashed into the incoming crowd.

One punch each!

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

Their fists were not as overpowering as Jiang Ning's, but they were way too powerful for these ordinary men.

The fighters flew out like shooting stars, howling in pain and crashing hard onto the floor without any way to fight back.

The howling and screaming made Su Mingquan tremble and move back. He didn't think that these men could fight this well!

There was a glimmer in Liu Xiaodao's eyes as he suddenly realized what was that feeling he had about Brother Gou.

The forbidden territory of Donghai!

Those men he met in Donghai!

When he was sent flying by Number 13 with a slap, it was exactly this feeling!

That gaze that wasn't bothered by anything and that violence that was filled with insanity and ferocity!

Why were they here?

"Liu Xiaodao!" Su Ming roared loudly. "Why the hell are you still standing there and daydreaming? Kill them!!"

Liu Xiaodao was the best fighter among Su Mingquan's men, and he was the only one left standing now.

"L..."

Liu Xiaodao's heart was filled with fear. How was he going to even fight these men?

If he had the ability to fight these men, he wouldn't have been walking along the highway for an entire afternoon in barely any clothes to the point where his feet wore out.

But since Su Mingquan had given orders, he couldn't not do anything either.

"I'll kill you guys!" Liu Xiaodao shouted loudly in hope of pumping himself up.

PAK!

But just as he reached Jiang Ning, he was sent flying. He didn't even know when Jiang Ning made an attack. His face was still flying and trembling when his bones cracked.

"AHHH!"

That howl agitated Su Mingquan and made him really panic.

He turned to find that none of his men in the house were still standing. All of them had collapsed on the floor and were clutching either their limbs or their stomachs and groaning in pain.

"Who...who the hell are you people?!" Su Mingquan was in shock. "How dare you touch me! I'm from the Su family!"

PAK!

Jiang Ning slapped him across the face. "I don't care who you are. If you've done something wrong, then you have to apologize. How do you wish to apologize?"

"You...you're asking for it!"

Su Mingquan clutched his face and yelled, "Where are the people outside! All those outside had better come in right now!"

He had left at least twenty to thirty men outside the house. If they all came in, they would be able to crush Jiang Ning and his men.

But after shouting and shouting, there was no response from outside.

PAK!

Jiang Ning slapped him again and some of his teeth flew out. "Answer my question. I don't have that much patience."

"So? How do you intend to apologize?"

Ye Qingwu was standing behind Jiang Ning and she felt like she had been struck by lightning.

Jiang Ning was really powerful!

That was the third son of the Su family! Su Mingquan had been throwing his weight about in Shenghai for many years now!

But Jiang Ning didn't hold back at all. He attacked because he said he would, and Su Mingquan's face was all swollen from just two slaps.

"Apologize NOW!" Jiang Ning roared thunderously. His voice boomed so loudly that Su Mingquan felt all the blood in his heart start rushing. He couldn't hold up anymore and fell to his knees with a loud thud.

"Spare me! Please spare me! I was wrong! I'm sorry!" Su Mingquan quickly pleaded for mercy.

"Apologize to her!" Jiang Ning pointed at Ye Qingwu.

Su Mingquan stayed on his knees and went over to Ye Qingwu. He started kowtowing again and again as his tears and mucus flowed. "I'm sorry! I overestimated myself and I shouldn't have offended you! I was wrong! I was so wrong! Miss Ye, you're a kind and magnanimous person, please don't be bothered by someone like me, please forgive me! Please!"

He was really scared now.

Was Jiang Ning and his men demons?

They had defeated all his men so easily and they had all collapsed onto the floor. If he didn't surrender now, Jiang Ning might kill him!

When did Ye Qingwu get to know such a frightening man?!

Even though he had already said that he was from the Su family, Jiang Ning still went ahead with beating up all his men and didn't have any regard for the Su family at all!

Jiang Ning stood by the side and Su Mingquan didn't even dare to lift his head. His terribly swollen face made even his speech garbled.

The taste of blood in his mouth made him feel even more terrified than ever.

Ye Qingwu was really stunned by this.

The person kneeling in front of her right now was that high and mighty Su

Mingquan!

That was the man who wanted to destroy and kill her just moments ago!

And now?

He was kneeling in front of her and crying out for mercy!

This...this was even more unreal than a dream.

Was it just because of Jiang Ning standing next to her?

She stared at Jiang Ning and was afraid that all this was just a dream. She was afraid that once she woke up from this dream, Su Mingquan was still that demon and was still bent on destroying her.

"Miss Ye! I'm begging you! Please forgive me!"

Su Mingquan noticed that Ye Qingwu didn't say anything, while Jiang Ning's expression darkened. Su Mingquan started shuddering out of fright as he quickly lifted a hand to slap his own face again and again.

PAK! PAK! PAK!

He slapped himself as he begged for mercy. "I was wrong! I know I was in the wrong! I was blind and offended you, Miss Ye! I was so wrong!"

"Please, I beg you, forgive me! Please forgive me!"

Su Mingquan's mouth continued to bleed. His speech wasn't clear anymore but he dared not stop.

Ye Qingwu stiffened. This...this was really happening!

"So, are you willing to forgive him?" Jiang Ning said very calmly. "If you don't want to forgive him, I'll kill him for you."

The temperature in the air instantly dropped to freezing point. Su Mingquan's throat went dry from fright as he squeaked and started slapping himself even harder than before.

PAK! PAK! PAK! Every slap sounded so crisp!

"!.."

Ye Qingwu's heart was pounding wildly. She never imagined that one day, Su Mingquan would be kneeling in front of her to beg for mercy.

She knew that if she didn't forgive Su Mingquan, Jiang Ning might really kill Su Mingquan!

If that happened, then Jiang Ning would have really gotten himself into trouble because that would offend the Su family.


"I...I just don't want him to harass me anymore. That's all," she said as she bit her lip.

She couldn't let Jiang Ning get into anymore trouble, because that would cause trouble for Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen.

"You heard that?"

Jiang Ning squatted down and patted Su Mingquan's face. "If you dare to offend her again, I guarantee that you'd be a cold corpse!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Su Mingquan's entire body was trembling as he shook his head profusely. "I won't dare to do that! I won't do that! I won't do that ever again!"

Even if he was ten times bolder, he dared not argue back now.

Su Mingquan could tell that Jiang Ning and his men were truly vicious.

If he dared to be arrogant again, they would really kill him without hesitation.

He continued to beg Ye Qingwu, "I beg you to let me off, Miss Ye, I really admit my mistake. If I had known that you were this Big Boss' friend, I wouldn't have dared to offend you like that."

He had boldly declared moments ago that he was going to have fun with Ye Qingwu and ruin her reputation, but now he was as pathetic as a dog without an owner.

"Fine. Since Qingwu doesn't want to hold it against you, then this case is closed," Jiang Ning nodded.

Su Mingquan finally breathed a sigh of relief in his heart.

For that moment earlier, he thought he was really going to die right there and then!

All the men with him were still sprawling on the floor and not a single one could move. So who would be able to protect him?

Once Jiang Ning was gone, he would return to the Su house!

He was going to get his family's fighters to kill Jiang

Ning and Ye Qingwu!

He had never suffered such humiliation before. He was going to settle this feud with them!

There was a glint in Su Mingquan's eyes, but it went by quickly. At least for the time being, Su Mingquan managed to keep his life.

"But I still have to talk to you about how you sent men to Donghai to make trouble."

Jiang Ning's next sentence made Su Mingquan freeze up and his face was filled with terror.

"Wait...how is this a separate matter?"

He screamed in fright. What did Jiang Ning mean? He was going to settle a second feud now?

"No! It wasn't me!" Su Mingquan quickly defended himself and he suddenly had a thought. "It's him!"

He pointed at Liu Xiaodao. "It's this bloody stray dog who made this decision on his own! He's the one who wanted to go!"

Liu Xiaodao immediately became anxious and cursed Su Mingquan for being an animal. Su Mingquan was now blaming him just to save his own skin.

He wanted to explain himself, but Su Mingquan glared at him and he didn't dare to say anything.

Jiang Ning ignored them and turned to look at Ye Qingwu.

"You can go out first. The rest is none of your business."

Ye Qingwu nodded in a daze and walked out of the house.

The moment she stepped out of the door, she felt like she had been struck by lightning again and her legs nearly gave way.

These twenty or thirty men in front of her worked under Su Mingquan. Su Mingquan had placed them outside the house to prevent her from getting away.

But now all of them were also all sprawling on the ground with broken limbs, and none of them dared to even utter a single sound.

Standing in front of them was the man who escorted Wang Wei and his parents out earlier. The man that Jiang Ning called Number 6!

Number 6 was standing there with one foot still on top of one of the men's head. He smiled faintly and said, "Miss Ye, please get into the car first."

Ye Qingwu's mind went blank.

She had never seen such incredibly powerful men.

Earlier she had witnessed Jiang Ning and his men beat up Su Mingquan and all those men inside the house to the point where they were all sprawling on the floor and begging for mercy. She was already dumbfounded when she saw that.

And now Number 6 had settled a few dozen men all by himself!

My goodness!

Were these men still human?

"Ungghhh..."

The man that Number 6 was stepping on started making noises because of the pain. Number 6 stepped a little harder on him and the man fainted.

"If anyone else dares to make any sound, then you can forget about making a sound for the rest of you life!" ordered Number 6.

If anyone dared to disrupt his Big Boss from having a good talk inside, then he was going to get nasty!

Everyone on the ground held their groans in.

Ye Qingwu got into the car and she was numb from head to toe.

Wang Wei and his parents were no better than her.

"That...that was amazing!" Wang Wei's face was red and his eyes were bulging as he gestured wildly to recount what happened. "Earlier this Mr Number 6 did this...then this...and then they were all on the ground!"

"It was like they were filming a movie!"

But this was no movie. If it was the other way round, they would be dead by now.

"Qingwu, are you alright?"

Wang Wei suddenly realized he asked a really dumb question. The man inside was Jiang Ning!

The man who was even more powerful than Number 6. So of course Ye Qingwu was fine.

"I'm fine."

"Su Mingquan..."

"He knelt down and apologized to me."

"WHAT?!"

Wang Wei's face was all white from fright. Su Mingquan knelt down?!

That wicked man actually knelt down in front of Ye Qingwu and apologized to her?

"Then he..." He was afraid that Su Mingquan would take revenge.

"I think he wouldn't dare to take revenge."

The events earlier were too shocking, terrifying, and too mindblowing.

Jiang Ning's imposing manner made Ye Qingwu unable to calm down.

This was only because she was Lin Yuzhen's friend. If someone actually tried to bully Lin Yuzhen, then... Ye Qingwu dared not even think of what might happen to that person.

She suddenly understood why Lin Yuzhen said that there was nobody in Donghai that she couldn't afford to offend.

No, it was the entire world!

There was absolutely nobody she couldn't afford to offend at all!

Ye Qingwu was glad that Lin Yuzhen wasn't the type who often made trouble, otherwise the world was going to be turned upside down.

The few of them sat in the car quietly. Their minds were still blank and they seemed to have lost the ability to think.

Meanwhile, in the bungalow.

Su Mingquan was kneeling on the floor and loudly defending himself, "It's not me! It really wasn't me! Why would I go to Donghai? That's your territory, so I wouldn't dare to go there at all!"

"It's him! It's Liu Xiaodao! He's tired of living and actually offended you! He was the one!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning stood there without saying anything and continued to stare at Su Mingquan.

"Liu Xiaodao! You bloody stray dog! How dare you try to harm me like that!" Su Mingquan yelled loudly. He suddenly ran towards Liu Xiaodao, picked up a bat on the floor and whacked Liu Xiaodao hard on the head.

"Ah! Ah!" Liu Xiaodao immediately howled in pain.

He smashed the bat down again and again on Liu Xiaodao's head, and was clearly going to kill him at this rate.

"You stupid stray dog! How dare you harm me! My family had fed you for so many years and this is how you repay us?!"

Su Mingquan looked like he had gone crazy. He continued to swing the bat crazily and crashed it hard against Liu Xiaodao's body. Liu Xiaodao could only keep rolling on the floor as he begged for mercy.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything and quietly watched Su Mingquan put on this act.

Everyone else on the floor was terribly fearful when they saw this scene.

Liu Xiaodao was someone who had fought hard for Su Mingquan for many years now, but Su Mingquan only cared about saving his own skin and didn't care about Liu Xiaodao's years of loyalty. He was now actually beating Liu Xiaodao up instead.

Besides, if Su Mingquan wasn't the one who gave the order, Liu Xiaodao would never have gone to Donghai.

On top of that, Liu Xiaodao had even persuaded Su Mingquan twice not to be rash. But in end, he was slapped twice in the face.

And now he was being beaten up so cruelly.

"AHH!!" Liu Xiaodao clutched his head and howled loudly as he tried to dodge Su Mingquan's bat. But Su Mingquan refused to stop.

"Do you admit it or not! Was it you or not! Was it you who tried to get me into trouble?!"

"Yes! Yes it was me! I was the one who decided on my own...AHH!" Liu Xiaodao yelled as he had no choice but to admit it. He didn't even know how many bones Su Mingquan had broken.

The moment Su Mingquan heard Liu Xiaodao admit it, he panted and turned to look at Jiang Ning gleefully.

"You heard him! He was the one! He was the one who went to Donghai on his own accord and it has nothing to with me!" Su Mingquan pointed at Liu Xiaodao. "If you want to kill someone, kill him! This has nothing to do with me!"

Liu Xiaodao was curled up on the floor and couldn't move anymore. If he didn't just admit it, Su Mingquan was going to beat him to death.

Jiang Ning glanced at Liu Xiaodao, then looked back at Su Mingquan.

"Since he's admitted it, then this matter doesn't have anything to do with Young Master Su."

Su Mingquan's anxious heart finally calmed down.

"I don't think he can live much longer like this," said Jiang Ning. "Since that's the case, I won't fight with a dying person."

He walked over to Su Mingquan and frightened Su Mingquan so badly that his entire body was trembling. "Young Master Su, I hope you understand that the Su family has their own territory and Donghai is my territory. So as long as you stay on your side, I will stay on my side and we'll be fine."

Jiang Ning then waved his hand and walked out with his men.

Su Mingquan collapsed on the floor and panted heavily.

He was really afraid that Jiang Ning would just kill him.

None of his men could still stand and even Liu Xiaodao was near death because he had beaten him up himself. Liu Xiaodao's head was bleeding and barely breathing.

Su Mingquan looked around to find that many of his men were staring at him with conflicted expressions.

"What are all of you looking at?!" Su Mingquan scolded them angrily. "All useless trash! There were so many of you but you couldn't take down two or three men!"

He shuddered at the thought of what happened earlier and was still angry. He noticed that Liu Xiaodao wasn't dead yet, so he scoffed, "Why are all of you still sitting there? Send him to hospital!"

Su Mingquan was the only one who was still quite

ok. His face was swollen and he had lost several teeth, but at least he could still stand.

Jiang Ning was too scary!

Those men with him were equally scary. His useless men couldn't kill them at all.

He had to get the fighters who worked for his family!

He ignored all the men on the floor and drove back to the Su house once he saw that Jiang Ning had left.

Meanwhile, some of the men carefully carried Liu Xiaodao and headed for the hospital.

They had watched how Su Mingquan had nearly beaten Liu Xiaodao to death and their hearts grew cold.

Even if they were only subordinates and were only as good as dogs to the Su family, at the very least they were loyal to Su Mingquan. But how did Su Mingquan treat them?

He didn't even care about their lives.

They were all furious but nobody dared to say anything. None of them could afford to offend the Su family.

That was the Su family!

That was one of the top families in the city of Shenghai. Their ancestors went back about a hundred years ago and were really big shots in Shenghai.

Rumor had it that the first head of the Su family was the head of the legendary Qing Sect!

The Su family had a business empire within Shenghai, and most of it was in the hands of the eldest son, Su Mingwei. He was only 35 years old, but he had increased the Su family assets by more than double in the past five years, and this had caused a huge uproar in Shenghai.

There were many businesses under the Su family. Real estate companies, entertainment companies, logistic companies and more.

The most notable move was when the Su family bought over the major logistics companies in Shenghai to monopolize this industry two years ago.

It was said that the Su family was able to do this because of the second son of the Su family, Su Mingchang.

He was a famous character in the illegal circle of Shenghai and everyone called him Second Master Su.

As the youngest son of the Su family, Su Mingquan was merely ordinary compared to his two elder brothers. He didn't have anything that he was particularly good at and only knew how to enjoy food and womanize. Very few of the artistes in his family's entertainment company managed to escape him.

And now he had a hand in other companies too. He was using the influence that his brothers had in order to throw his weight about!

The current head of the Su family, Su Bowen, had a terrible headache over this.

He had just heard that Su Mingquan had tried to go after the most popular singer right now, Ye Qingwu, and Ye Qingwu's boss had actually come looking for him over this.

Su Bowen didn't care about this sort of behavior, but the problem was that this was very damaging to his family's reputation.

The Su family had developed tremendously in Shenghai partly because of their good repute. If the Su family wanted to go even further, then they would need more than just pure cash.

"Master, Young Master Mingquan is back," the butler reported.

"Tell him to see me!" Su Bowen was a little frustrated now.

"Dad! Dad!"

Before the butler could tell Su Mingquan to see his father, Su Mingquan had already come running in himself and looked a mess.

Su Bowen was about to start scolding his son when he saw that Su Mingquan's face was all swollen and he got a shock.

"What happened? Who hit your face?"

Who actually dared to hit his precious son?!

This was Shenghai!

"Dad, you have to help me out here!" Su Mingquan

looked so upset. "I just wanted to bed some small time celebrity but her friend actually dared to hit me! Look at how bad it is!"

"This is not just a slap in my face, but also a slap in the Su family's face!"

"Who is this person?" Su Bowen yelled angrily. "He even dared to hit a Su family member? Is he tired of living?!"

He and his two eldest sons were fairly indulgent towards this youngest child of the family. How else would Su Mingquan have become so arrogant and overbearing?

"They're from Donghai!"

"Donghai?"

Su Bowen frowned. He had heard mention of this name several times lately. He had even heard a thing or two from his friends from some families in the north.

This Donghai wasn't simple.

Even the Luo family had lost their territory to them, so there was someone very powerful backing Donghai.

"How did you end up offending someone from Donghai?" Su Bowen's face fell. "I've always told you that it's fine to play, but there are certain circles that you must not touch! Why didn't you listen to me?!"

"Dad!" Su Mingquan looked even more upset. "Your son has been beaten up but you're scolding me instead of avenging me?"

"Did you know that man nearly killed me?!"

Su Bowen's expression changed. The people from Donghai were so domineering?

"If I hadn't said that I was from the Su family, I think he might really have killed me."

Su Mingquan thought that Jiang Ning didn't dare to kill him because he said he was from the Su family. If Jiang Ning still dared to kill Su Mingquan, that meant that the Su family meant nothing to Jiang Ning.

But since Jiang Ning didn't kill him in the end, that meant that he was still wary of the Su family.

Su Bowen guessed the same thing too.

"Where does this guy come from?"

"I don't know."

"What has he got to do with Ye Qingwu?"

"I don't know."

Su Bowen nearly slapped his son. What did he know then?!

"They seem to be friends."

"That sounds about right. She's just a small celebrity and that's just her friend who wants to teach you a lesson and isn't going to kill you," Su Bowen nodded and thought he had it figured out.

Those people in Donghai were so powerful likely because they were backed by the north. Otherwise there was no way they could control the illegal

circles of Tianhai while the north kept quiet.

This man had just taught Su Mingquan a lesson without killing him, so that was proof that the other party was wary of the Su family.

"What else did he say?" Su Bowen continued to ask.

"He said that the Su family has their own territory and Donghai has their own, so we should keep to our own sides..."

Su Mingquan started getting angry. "But he's already hit me, so how is that keeping to our own sides? Dad, you have to avenge me, otherwise I'm going to look for Mingchang and make sure Mingchang kills him off!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Shut up!" Su Bowen shouted angrily. His stern expression frightened Su Mingquan.

He had never seen Su Bowen look so cold before.

"Humph! Don't go around offending others!" Su Bowen smiled coldly. "He didn't kill you today, but it might not have been because he was afraid of our family. It was probably just not worth doing so over a small celebrity."

"Donghai is now well known to be a forbidden territory, so don't go around offending them and bring trouble to the family. Of course, they wouldn't dare to touch you again. Not everyone dares to kill someone from the Su family either!"

He was quite sure that the people from Donghai was wary of his family. So since they had only taught Su Mingquan a lesson, then there was no need to blow this matter up.

"I'm warning you. Do not give me any trouble. The family is now at an important stage and if anything goes wrong, I won't let anyone off, not even you!"

Su Mingquan didn't dare to say anymore. He was shuddering from fear because had never seen Su Bowen act so harshly before.

He could only hang his head and listen to his father. But deep inside he told himself that he was going to get his brother to kill Jiang Ning!

"From today onwards, you are not to go out and you're going to just stay at home," instructed Su Bowen. "Without my permission, you're not going anywhere!"

Su Mingquan couldn't stand being trapped at home

like this.

He was about to open his mouth in protest but Su Bowen's cold gaze frightened him so badly he couldn't get a single word out.

"Also, don't offend Ye Qingwu and don't touch any of those women anymore, you hear me?"

"Got it," replied Su Mingquan as he hung his head.

"Go back to your room!"

Su Mingquan couldn't stand it at all. He had just been beaten and he had nearly lost his life.

He even kowtowed to Ye Qingwu and begged her to let him off. How could he take this sort of humiliation lying down?

He had come home because he wanted to get highly skilled fighters to kill Jiang Ning and his men!

But instead of getting revenge, he got scolded by Su Bowen. His heart was on fire now.

Su Bowen stood in the living room, then paced up and down as he frowned and went into deep thought for a while.

"Those people from Donghai clearly don't want to clash with the Su family head on," he concluded. "Humph, looks like they're still wary of the Su family. After all, within Shenghai, only those two families can fight with mine. Tiny little Donghai should not try anything funny outside of their territory. They aren't worthy to fight my family at all."

Su Bowen got it all figured out.

Donghai was now famous within the southeast region as a forbidden territory, and even the north was talking about it.

There wasn't much information on the place, but there was definitely someone backing them. How else could they have replaced Master Fu?

But since Donghai didn't intend to blow this matter up, then Su Bowen didn't want to invite unnecessary trouble either.

It was a good chance to teach Su Mingquan a lesson. Otherwise if he really offended someone he couldn't afford to offend, it would be way more troublesome for the Su family.

"It's an important time for the family. These two years will determine which one of the three families can advance."

Su Bowen narrowed his eyes. Somewhere deep in his eyes was nothing but ambition!

Out of his three sons, Su Mingquan was definitely hopeless, but his two older ones were outstanding and powerful enough. They were also united in heart, so this had helped the Su family rise by another level.

He didn't ask for anything else. He just wanted the Su family to be at the top of Shenghai!

Meanwhile.

Jiang Ning sent Ye Qingwu home.

Ye Qingwu was still in a daze. She felt like she was still dreaming.

Jiang Ning was someone from her dream, because only someone in her dreams would have been so strong.

"It was right for you not to kill Su Mingquan," said Ye Qingwu. "The Su family is very powerful in Shanghai and very few are to offend them."

She thought that Jiang Ning must have considered this too, so it was enough to stand up for her and get rid of this troublesome matter she had on hand.

"Yup," Jiang Ning didn't bother explaining further and just nodded. "Have a good rest, that Su Mingquan won't dare to touch you anymore."

"In fact, nobody else would."

As long as everyone knew that Su Mingquan had been beaten up while Ye Qingwu came out unscathed, nobody would want to be the next Su Mingquan.

"Thank you," said Ye Qingwu gratefully.

"No worries, you're Yuzhen's friend."

Ye Qingwu nodded.

Indeed, Jiang Ning had bothered precisely because she was Lin Yuzhen's friend.

Otherwise why would he bother?

She was really envious of Lin Yuzhen now.

"Alright now, I have to go. Come to Donghai whenever you have time, Yuzhen would really love for you to go."

Jiang Ning's words always included Lin Yuzhen.

Jiang Ning then left with his men.

Ye Qingwu closed the door and leaned against it. Everything still felt unreal to her.

The good part was that this trouble was settled and she could continue living her life.

Brother Gou wanted to ask a question several times but stopped himself. He saw that Jiang Ning was resting with his eyes closed and didn't dare to disturb his sleep. His face was all red from trying to hold it in.

"Just ask what you want to," Jiang Ning said quietly while keeping his eyes shut.

"Big Boss, my brain is not very smart, so there's something I don't understand!"

"What do you not understand?"

"Why...why didn't you just kill Su Mingquan?!" Brother Gou couldn't stand it anymore. "That Su Mingquan is someone who does this on a regular basis and has clearly harmed a lot of people! The information we got from Butler Zhao is enough to kill this bastard a million times over! But why...why didn't you just kill him off?!"

"By leaving him alive, his family would think that Donghai is scared of the Su family!"

But of course, Donghai wasn't afraid of the Su family at all!

As long as Jiang Ning gave the order, Brother Gou would immediately crash the Su house and finish off that bastard of a Su Mingquan.

He had already clenched his fists and was all ready to smash Su Mingquan's head to pieces in the bungalow, but Jiang Ning let him off, and even said weird things about staying on their own side.

This didn't sound like their Big Boss at all!

"Gou, you got one thing right."

"What?" Brother Gou was caught off guard. "What... what did I say?"

He had already forgotten what he just said.

"You said your brain isn't very smart."

Jiang Ning opened his eyes, while the other wolves were trying not to laugh.

All of them were nearly dying on the inside from laughter when they saw how clueless Brother Gou looked but they dared not laugh out loud. Brother Gou would kill them when they got back to Donghai if they laughed at him.

"It's very easy to get rid of the Su family," said Jiang Ning. "But what happens after that? There's still the Li family, the Wang family, the Zhang family and many more. Do you have so much time to kill them all?"

"I...don't."

Brother Gou hung his head.

"When it comes to getting things done, I will use my fists when my fists can solve the problem. But there are times when using your brain is better than fists."

Jiang Ning glanced at Brother Gou. He paused for a while and went quiet, then waved his hands.

"I don't know why I'm telling you all this. You just concentrate on using your fists."

PFFFFT!

Number 6 couldn't hold it in anymore. He was usually very stern and quiet, but now his face was all red from holding his laughter in. After hearing Jiang Ning's helpless and frustrated tone of voice, he couldn't stand it anymore and burst out laughing so badly that he started coughing.

"Number 6!" Brother Gou glared at him. "You're laughing at me!"

"No I'm not. Big Boss told a really funny joke."

Number 6 immediately put a straight face on, but his lips were still twitching.

"Big Boss didn't tell any joke! You're laughing at me! I'm gonna fight it out with you!"

Brother Gou pounced over and the car started shaking violently like some fight was happening inside.

The car slowly drove along and soon reached Shenghai's Third Hospital.

"Gou, follow me, the rest wait here."

"Got it."

Jiang Ning brought Brother Gou towards the wards.

Brother Gou didn't say anything and just followed Jiang Ning in silence. He knew his strengths and weaknesses well. Since his brain wasn't of much use, then he was going to make his fists harder!

He would specialize in settling matters that needed fists to settle.

On the 16th floor of the hospital.

It was late at night and there were very few people along the corridor. Jiang Ning stuffed his hands into his pocket and walked into one of the wards, while Brother Gou stood guard outside.

Liu Xiaodao was lying on the bed when he heard a noise. He opened his eyes with a start and was terrified when he saw Jiang Ning.

He couldn't move at all now and couldn't defend himself.

"You...you're here to kill me!" said Liu Xiaodao through clenched teeth. He wanted to get out of bed, but then he remembered that even if he wasn't injured, he wouldn't survive past the first move from Jiang Ning.

"You're not worthy for me to kill you."

Jiang Ning walked over to the bed and looked at Liu Xiaodao's injuries with a face filled with mocking. "How does it feel to be beaten half to death by your owner?"

Liu Xiaodao was surprised by this question. Then he

realized that Jiang Ning really wasn't here to kill him.

"I was blind!" replied Liu Xiaodao angrily with hatred in his voice.

Of course Liu Xiaodao was angry.

He had worked for Su Mingquan for eight years now. He had done so many wicked things for Su Mingquan over the past eight years!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

This time Liu Xiaodao had offended Jiang Ning only because Su Mingquan had designs on Ye Qingwu.

And in the end, even though he had advised Su Mingquan not to offend the people in Donghai, Su Mingquan slapped him twice. Then when Su Mingquan was in trouble, he didn't even treat him like a human, and just used him to save his own skin.

His heart had grown very cold indeed!

Liu Xiaodao glanced at Jiang Ning. "I'm no match for you, so kill me if you want. I'm not interested in all this nonsense."

"As I said, you're not worthy for me to kill," repeated Jiang Ning calmly. "I'm here to give you a chance."

"A chance?"

Liu Xiaodao laughed coldly. Jiang Ning was so powerful that he had no regard for even the Su family.

He didn't think that Jiang Ning had spared Su Mingquan because he was wary of the Su family. He could tell that even Jiang Ning's men would have killed Su Mingquan without batting an eyelid.

Jiang Ning must have decided against killing Su Mingquan for another reason.

"That's right. I want to give you a chance to take revenge."

"A chance to avenge your younger sister."

Liu Xiaodao's gaze changed when he heard mention of his younger sister.

He suddenly exuded a terrifying amount of murder from deep within, as if a wild beast had been awakened within him and even his teeth could bite someone to death.

"You checked on me?"

"I didn't just check, I went to find the truth," said Jiang Ning. "You probably don't know, but the one who raped and killed your younger sister was that person you've worked for over the past eight years, Su Mingquan."

Liu Xiaodao's eyes immediately widened.

"Impossible!" he scoffed coldly. "You want to sow discord between the Su family and me? Dream on!"

"I won't believe you!"

Back then, Liu Xiaodao's younger sister had met with a terrible end and he nearly went mad. It was Su Mingquan who found the murderer and let him kill the murderer himself. After that he followed Su Mingquan and did everything he could for him.

"It's up to you whether you want to believe me or not. It's not hard to get to the bottom of this either, you just need to put in a little more effort."

Jiang Ning glanced at Liu Xiaodao's injuries. "Besides, do you still need me to sow discord between you and the Su family?"

Liu Xiaodao was silent.

He did really hate Su Mingquan, and he was utterly disappointed in Su Mingquan.

It wasn't worth putting his life at risk for such a

person. He had already repaid the favor a long time ago.

And after listening to Jiang Ning, he might have even been fooled all this while!

He had to investigate!

He had to make sure he got all the facts right!

"Why are you telling me these things?"

"As I said, I'm giving you a chance to take revenge," Jiang Ning went straight to the point. "I want the illegal circle of Shenghai to become a complete mess. The Su family is one way of opening up this Pandora's box, and the person who's going to open it is you."

"Hoho! What boastful words!"

He wanted the illegal circle of Shenghai to become a mess?

Jiang Ning was too arrogant!

Did he think that Donghai would have a chance to enter Shenghai once it was messy here?

This was Shenghai they were talking about!

It was not a place that others could look down upon!

"What are you trying to do?!"

Jiang Ning remained calm and didn't explain himself immediately. Liu Xiaodao's eyes instantly narrowed and he suddenly had a feeling that even if Shenghai's illegal circle was in chaos, Jiang Ning would have a way to keep it under control.

"I want those people who do wicked things to have no more chance to do wicked things. I want to wipe them out at one shot," Jiang Ning said very simply.

"Most people in this world are ordinary folk like your younger sister. When they get bullied, humiliated and hurt, they are often helpless and pitiful, but who would sympathize with them?"

"People like Su Mingquan, or those powerful families like the Su family, will never care about the lives of ordinary folk."

"I don't really want to do anything in that sense. I just want fewer people to be hurt, and for social order to improve. That's all."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Liu Xiaodao felt his heart pound. After hearing what Jiang Ning said, he felt like blood was rushing through his entire body.

That's all?!

Just listening to it made him all pumped up.

But how was this possible? This was Shengkai!

This was a place where the competition was extremely cruel and many people died fighting each other. What Jiang Ning wanted to do was even more difficult than flying to the moon.

Besides the illegal circle of Shengkai and the Su family, the Zuo family and Gao family were also as powerful as the Su family.

These three powerful families were not people that one Jiang Ning or one Dongkai could move!

"I'm a wicked man too, so you're going to wipe me out as well?" he asked as he looked at Jiang Ning.

"Of course, I never intended to let you off," Jiang Ning was very honest.

Liu Xiaodao laughed. He laughed loudly while tears ran down his face like he had gone mad.

"Why would I help you? Or rather, why should I help you?!"

Jiang Ning didn't give him a reason. He walked to his side and gave Liu Xiaodao a dagger, then turned to leave.

"I'll be waiting for your news in Dongkai."

He then closed the door behind him.

Liu Xiaodao picked up the knife and saw a familiar engraving on the handle. The tears in his eyes couldn't stop flowing. This was engraved by his younger sister, and this knife was her birthday present to him!

He gripped the knife handle tightly as his fingers touched the engraving on the handle. His tears blurred his vision.

Jiang Ning's words were hypnotic and kept replaying in his mind, echoing in his head...

Slowly he calmed back down. His eyes became alert, aggressive and violent!

There was also a determination in his eyes. Even if the next step was death, he would not hesitate!

.....

Jiang Ning hopped into the car after coming out from the hospital and found a hotel to rest for the night so that he could rush back to Donghai first thing the next morning. He missed Lin Yuzhen after not seeing her for one day.

Even this five star hotel bed wasn't as comfortable as the bed back at home.

Jiang Ning couldn't find a comfortable sleeping position at all because his arms were missing Lin Yuzhen, and he wasn't used to it at all.

He thought of the time when he was on missions and he could sleep well even if you hung him from a tree.

"I've slacked off."

Jiang Ning closed his eyes and he started to reminiscence about the past.

The plan to go up north had just started. The first step from Donghai had gone through very smoothly.

After this was the southeast region, and Huang Yuming was already making arrangements, so he could start moving in soon. This plan was to run parallel to Lin Group's expansion plans.

A bigger world was waiting for them.

If Ye Qingwu didn't appear at this time, Jiang Ning would have left Shenghai for later. But since he was presented with such a good opportunity now, he wasn't letting it go.

Liu Xiaodao was going to be the one to start.

Jiang Ning knew without a doubt that Liu Xiaodao would listen to him. Once Liu Xiaodao's injuries were all healed up, Shenghai's illegal circle was going to go through a storm.

"For now, let this knife fly for a while longer."

The night passed peacefully.

First thing the next morning, Jiang Ning's phone started ringing violently, as if it was both anxious and in a great hurry.

He opened his eyes and quickly picked it up when he saw that Lin Yuzhen was calling him.

"Yuzhen?"

"Jiang Ning! Something's happened!"

Lin Yuzhen's voice was anxious and it cracked a little.

Clearly something major had happened, so Lin Yuzhen became very anxious.

"Stay calm, tell me what happened?" Jiang Ning quickly asked.

"The company! Something's happened at the company! Someone...jumped off the building!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Someone jumped off the building?

Jiang Ning frowned. How did something like that happen?

"It's ok, don't be anxious, I'll go back right now."

After consoling Lin Yuzhen, Jiang Ning called his men together to rush back to Donghai.

The atmosphere within Lin Group was rather tense and very somber.

Nobody would have imagined something like that would suddenly happen.

The news spread first thing in the morning, and the entire office knew about it.

Lin Wen and Lin Yuzhen had already arranged for the staff to be comforted. They also contacted the relevant departments to investigate this matter.

The air in the office was heavy.

Everyone lowered their heads and worked quietly. Nobody dared to say a single word.

Jiang Ning was here!

He had just reached the ground floor of the building. The receptionist's eyes immediately lit up when she saw Jiang Ning.

"Brother Ning!"

"Don't worry, I'm back."

These words from Jiang Ning were enough to calm their hearts down instantly.

As he went upstairs, everyone who saw him greeted him. It seemed like Jiang Ning's return made everyone calm down and they didn't feel as anxious anymore.

As long as this man was around, everything could be settled, no matter what happened.

"Don't worry, everyone, we will settle this matter properly. Lin Group will ensure everyone's safety."

Xiaozhao and the other staff were trying their best to comfort the other staff so that they wouldn't be overly anxious. This was just an accident.

Jiang Ning then walked into Lin Yuzhen's office.

Lin Yuzhen looked very anxious, and the moment Jiang Ning came in, she walked over to him.

"Jiang Ning! You're finally back!"

Jiang Ning took her hands in his. "Don't worry, I'm here."

He then turned and saw that there were several directors in the office waiting for Jiang Ning.

"Tell me exactly what happened."

"Brother Ning, the staff who jumped off was the new person in charge of expanding the market," said the director of business development. "He's one of the eight who were supposed to expand the company into the southeast region."

Jiang Ning's eyes narrowed.

Those eight workers were the best among the younger workers. They were opportunists and very

motivated. He had given the eight of them a chance to mature as quickly as possible and to share Lin Yuzhen's burden.

But one of them had suddenly died like that.

"He was a very capable worker and produced results in just half a month. He was still really happy when he reported to me yesterday and said that he was thankful to CEO Lin and Brother Ning for trusting him and supporting him, and said that he would not disappoint the company."

"But in the middle of the night, he jumped off the top floor of Lin Group!"

The director's eyes were bloodshot and his lips were trembling. "He only left a note on his desk. It says: If you work for Lin Group, you're definitely going to die!"

Jiang Ning's eyes narrowed violently as he took the note from the director. The text was printed, so there was no way to tell who placed this note there.

This was clearly a threat!

It was a warning.

It was meant to create fear and unrest among the Lin Group from the inside.

It was little wonder that everyone in the office seemed very nervous. Anyone would feel uneasy if they heard about this.

"Brother Ning, we've talked to the police and they've already checked the place and confirmed it's suicide."

Jiang Ning nodded.

"Alright. I'll handle this matter, don't worry." He paused before continuing, "Lin Group will ensure the staff's safety and dignity. This is our priority. Anyone who dares to harm anyone from Lin Group will pay a painful price for doing so!"

A terrifying murderous air was instantly unleashed.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The directors nodded vigorously. "Yes, Brother Ning!"

"Try to comfort his family as much as possible, since he sacrificed himself in order to expand Lin Group. We will give the family \$3 million and we will take care of his family as well as solve any other problems his family is facing," said Jiang Ning. "I will also attend his memorial service and apologize personally to his parents."

All the directors felt tears come to their eyes.

Most people would dodge the topic as much as possible and would never want to be in contact with the deceased's family so as to avoid any further trouble.

But Jiang Ning had given the deceased sufficient respect.

He wasn't stingy on the bereavement amount, and was even willing to put a memorial service together and personally apologize to the deceased's parents.

"Jiang Ning..."

Lin Yuzhen's eyes were teary. She didn't have any objections as to how Jiang Ning settled this matter, and she admired this husband of hers even more than before.

"Every staff is a family member of Lin Group. I didn't protect him well and that's my responsibility to bear," said Jiang Ning. "Get everything arranged."

"Yes, Brother Ning!"

All the directors went out.

Jiang Ning gently wiped the tears away from Lin Yuzhen's eyes as he saw the anxiety and worry on her face.

He knew that Lin Yuzhen would blame herself and think that she was the cause of this incident. She would think that if she was able to bear all the work herself, then this wouldn't have happened.

"The process of maturing is a very tough one, but nobody will regret choosing this path," Jiang Ning told her gently. "I believe that Lin Group can provide greater security and dignity to our workers in the future, and we have to work hard towards this. Understand?"

"Got it," Lin Yuzhen nodded.

"What are you going to do next?"

"Since someone has done this in secret and used such a cruel method, I'm going to make him pay!"

If Jiang Ning couldn't even settle this matter, then he could forget about going up north.

Someone had actually dared to send a challenge like that. He was going to show them how terrifying the God of War could become once angered!

How dare this person strike an ordinary worker?! Jiang Ning was going to use his life to pay for his staff's life.

Huang Yuming soon returned.

He came back the moment he heard the news.

"Investigate!"

That was Jiang Ning's only instruction.

They had to get to the bottom of this matter as soon as possible. Huang Yuming discussed this with Governor Zhang and Butler Zhao and they reached a decision.

Huang Yuming returned to the southeast region and checked every bit of information he had on Jianzhou, since they had just expanded the company there.

On the other side, Butler Zhao's information network and Governor Zhang's legal inspections were operating at the same time. Neither could relax until the truth was found.

Lin Group put up an obituary and it made all the workers feel touched.

Jiang Ning's words and the way he made arrangements after this incident made them all feel that the management of the company really treated every staff as a family member of Lin Group!

Anyone's departure would make them sad and upset.

Anyone who dared to harm an employee of Lin Group would make them angry!

"It's worth working for such a company," Chen Yu sighed with bloodshot eyes.

This place wasn't just a place to work and earn enough money to feed the family. It was also a place that gave each worker dignity and respect. She had never seen a corporation operate like that before. They had donated half their profits to charity and left the other half to give to the staff as

bonuses.

The Lin family and Jiang Ning had never placed profit making as their aim.

This large ship helped to unite more people to do more meaningful things!

"Even if I die, I'm going to remain a member of Lin Group!" Xiaozhao said with determination as she clenched her fists.

In no time, clues surfaced!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning was surprised that the attack came from Assassins Group again.

After they failed to kill him, they had actually gone for an ordinary person. This made Jiang Ning furious.

Butler Zhao put the information he had on the table with a grim face.

He could feel Jiang Ning's fury. It was enough to burn all of Donghai down.

"We've found traces of the assassin moving around, and he hid himself very well. If we didn't have people watching this specifically, it would have been hard to find him," said Butler Zhao. "This was especially so because this assassin is not very powerful. He's not much higher in skill than an ordinary person."

"I believe he disguised himself as a client and wanted to discuss something important with the deceased, then used that as a chance to murder him."

Jiang Ning's expression became even grimmer after hearing this.

That deceased worker was still thinking about nothing but work even though it was so late at night. He was still focused on solving a problem for a client so that he could contribute to Lin Group's expansion.

Little did he know that he would meet with such misfortune.

"The police couldn't find any proof of murder, which means that this killer is fairly professional and

excellent at disguising himself, as well as very good at escaping detection. I immediately put the clues together and found that this man is indeed the killer!"

"Is he still in Donghai?"

"No," Butler Zhao shook his head. "He left that night."

Too many people came in and out of Donghai everyday. The only thing they could do was to watch over anyone who had stronger capabilities than others or those who were of special identities so as to protect Donghai.

But a killer who was not much different from an ordinary person was difficult to prevent.

Or at least they hadn't found a way yet.

"Mr Jiang, I feel that this was aimed at Lin Group, so it should be someone who has a conflict of interest with a recent business dealing."

Jiang Ning nodded. He had guessed as much.

Otherwise there would be no reason why an ordinary worker would have been targeted. This person got someone murdered and purposely created fear and unrest among the Lin Group staff.

"Humph, Lin Group is expanding too quickly and some people are getting scared, so they're wary of what Lin Group can do. That only proves that Lin Group is on the right track!"

Jiang Ning continued in a malicious tone of voice, "Zhao, check all the influential people who may have a conflict of interest with Lin Group recently. I'm

going to find the mastermind behind this and make him pay a heavy price!"

"Got it."

Butler Zhao immediately saw to it.

Meanwhile, the memorial service for the deceased staff was happening in the hall.

Lin Yuzhen pinned a white flower onto Jiang Ning's lapel.

"Jiang Ning, I won't be afraid, don't worry about me," said Lin Yuzhen in a quiet voice.

Since someone had targeted Lin Group and even targeted a staff of Lin Group, that meant that Lin Yuzhen herself would be a target of many others.

But she wasn't afraid.

She trusted that Jiang Ning wouldn't let anything happen to her, and he also wouldn't let any misfortune befall any of the Lin Group staff.

"I believe you," Jiang Ning nodded. "Let's go."

Every employee of Lin Group had come. There wasn't enough space inside, so there were people standing along the corridors and even the staircase.

Everyone had a flower in their hand as they remembered their colleague who met an untimely death.

This was the first time they felt something happen so close to their heart. It was as if the one who passed away wasn't just a colleague but a family member.

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen walked in, presented their flowers and bowed deeply.

The deceased's parents were standing by the side and their faces were filled with great pain and sadness. They seemed to have grown much older overnight.

"Uncle, Auntie, I'm so sorry," Jiang Ning bowed very deeply and apologized. "I didn't protect him. That was my fault."

The mother looked up and her eyes were in a daze. When she saw Jiang Ning, her tears started to fall.

Her throat was hoarse from crying.

That day, her son had come home and told her that he had been promoted and could earn more so that his family could live better lives. He could contribute to Lin Group's expansion and contribute even more to Donghai.

She was even happier than her son.

Lin Group was now the dream company that everyone wanted their children to get a place in.

This wasn't just a job but also a responsibility.

Lin Group had given so much to Donghai and to its people. So everybody wanted their children to work for Lin Group, and every parent was proud of their children who worked there.

But nobody expected something like this to happen.

"My son..." the mother's lips were trembling. "He worked for Lin Group...was he...was he a decent worker?"

"He was very outstanding," Jiang Ning replied her seriously. "I wanted to groom him into someone who would be even more outstanding so that he could hold his own fort and contribute to Lin Group and Donghai's development."

The mother nodded and said, "Thank you."

Jiang Ning didn't say anymore.

Lin Yuzhen knew that Lin Group was going to become a huge tree, and after going through certain things, this company was going to become even more united and close knit.

She suddenly understood the direction in which she had to work hard in, and she also realized how heavy the responsibility on her shoulders was.

Jiang Ning was now helping her to carry this responsibility. But in the future, she had to share it with him.

If Lin Group was one big family, then Lin Yuzhen was like the parents in this family and she had to be responsible for every worker!

When Jiang Ning walked out of the hall, Butler Zhao and Huang Yuming were already waiting at the door for him.

"Found the mastermind?"

"No, but we found the killer," Huang Yuming said in a sinister voice, "It's really someone from Assassins Group."

Jiang Ning scoffed. It was really Assassins Group. They couldn't kill him, so now they decided to strike an ordinary person.

"Assassins Group has a contact point in the southeast. This assassin got this mission from there," said Butler Zhao. "Gou is now following the killer, so he can make his move anytime."

Was it enough to just kill the assassin as revenge?

It wasn't enough!

It wasn't enough at all!

If they didn't make it hurt for Assassins Group, then the group would never understand that Jiang Ning meant it when he said Donghai was a forbidden territory.

Jiang Ning wanted to make sure that Donghai was so formidable that nobody in the country or in the world would dare to make trouble in this city.

"Tell Gou to capture that assassin," instructed Jiang Ning coldly. "I'm going to smash Assassins Group's contact point to powder!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Got it!"

Huang Yuming immediately gave orders.

Meanwhile,

At a mahjong club in Jianzhou.

It was noisy inside the club. There was a man who wore very ordinary clothes and looked like anybody else on the street. There was a cigarette dangling from his mouth and he didn't look serious at all.

"Come, come, come! Let's have a few more rounds!" he said with a big smile. "Luck is on my side today, so don't go away!"

"You're just lucky. I thought you said that you didn't even have money for food. Where did you get money from?"

"Exactly! You haven't returned me the money I lent you the last time! Don't tell me you went around stealing money or something?"

"Tsk, it's just a few hundred dollars, right?"

The man pulled out a few notes from the drawer and threw it at the other man. "Don't bother counting. Come on, let's play another round!"

He flicked the ash of his cigarette and suddenly noticed someone walk into the club. He kept the same expression on but he felt that something wasn't right.

"Give me a minute, I need the bathroom!"

He pulled the drawer open, stuffed all his money into his bag, then ran towards the bathroom.

"What the hell? Lazy people really have to pee and poop more than others!"

"Who the hell wants to touch your money?"

All of them started cursing after him.

The man didn't care about them. He quickly darted through the back door and left the club. He turned back and was relieved when he saw that nobody had come after him.

"Where do you think you're going?"

Suddenly someone appeared in front of him and stared coldly at him.

The man immediately turned to run, but there was someone else behind him too.

"Who...who are you people?!"

He immediately grew nervous.

He didn't think someone would have found him.

"What do you want?!"

The person in front walked into the light. Brother Gou's face was filled with murder, and the man's face instantly paled.

Brother Gou wasn't great at using his brains, but if it involved his fists, he acted without hesitation.

BAM!

One punch knocked him out cold.

"Take him away!"

They disappeared with the man. His bag had fallen and money was scattered all over the ground. It was only about \$100,000 or so.

\$100,000 was all it took to kill an outstanding employee of Lin Group?!

Jiang Ning stared at the unconscious man in front of him and he felt the urge to just smash his head right now.

"Make him wake up."

Brother Gou splashed a tub of cold water on his face. The man immediately shouted loudly and looked frantic.

He looked around him and realized he was in a strange place somewhere in the countryside. There was probably nobody within the next few miles.

"Who...who are you people?" He looked warily at Jiang Ning and the rest. "I don't know any of you!"

"Did you kill Zhang Jian from Lin Group?" Jiang Ning asked directly.

"What Zhang Jian? I don't know what you're talking about!" the man's expression changed and he quickly tried to defend himself. "Who are you people? Let me go! Let me go!"

"You're a master of disguise, you've even kidnapped women and children before, and you've been a professional killer for about two years now," Jiang Ning continued in a sinister voice. "You love to eat, drink, play with women, gamble, hate to work...you're really the trash of human society!"

The man's face instantly paled. How did Jiang Ning

know all of this?

"\$100,000!"

Jiang Ning slapped him so hard that the man's skin split open.

"For \$100,000, you dared to murder the young man who had a bright future in the company!"

"Ahh..."

His howls rang through the empty land. His teeth went flying and blood came out from his mouth. His face was filled with terror as if he had seen a ghost.

"It's not me...it's not me..." the man continued to deny it. "You've caught the wrong guy!"

"Gou!" Jiang Ning shouted.

"Yes Big Boss!"

Brother Gou didn't hesitate at all. He grabbed one of the man's fingers and exerted some force. The man's finger was broken with a cracking sound.

"AHHH!"

It was another bloodcurdling scream.

Brother Gou wasn't done. He picked up another finger and did the same thing.

The man's face was all distorted and red from the pain.

The empty land echoed with bloodcurdling scream after bloodcurdling scream, as if a vengeful ghost was crying miserably.

Jiang Ning stood there and watched the man without moving.

Brother Gou was like a robot as he expressionlessly picked up a fifth finger...

"I'll talk, I'll talk!"

The man completely broke down and he was shuddering violently. He had never thought that he would meet these two terrifying men just by picking up this mission that gave him \$100,000. "I'm the one...I pretended to be a client, drugged him, then pushed him off the building!"

"I'm the one who set up the scene so that the police would think he committed suicide!"

He saw Jiang Ning's expression and quickly added on, "I left the note too because that was part of the mission's instructions. This was a mission from Black Mountain! Even if I didn't take it, someone else would have!"

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes and didn't say anything, but Brother Gou got it immediately.

He grabbed the man's jaw and asked nastily, "Where is this Black Mountain?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"I...I can't reveal this!"

The man shook his head desperately. These were the rules of Assassins Group. If he revealed the location, then even if Jiang Ning didn't kill him, he was dead meat anyway.

Assassins Group wouldn't let him off and he would die terribly.

Jiang Ning glanced at him and left without a word.

Brother Gou continued to pick up a fifth finger of the man...

Huang Yuming lit a cigarette for Jiang Ning in the car.

"Black Mountain's Noodle Shop is Assassins Group's contact point in the southeast region, the assassin has told us about it already," he said coldly. "This Assassins Group is a really big network internationally, I didn't expect it to have such deep roots here."

"This world is much more complicated than you realize. You'll understand in due time," Jiang Ning didn't explain too much. "Let's go to Black Mountain's Noodle Shop."

He didn't care if that assassin died or not. This sort of human trash didn't have the right to breathe anymore anyway.

Brother Gou was going to break all his fingers, then break every bone in his body so that he would repent in his pain and pray to be a good person in his next life while faced with the terror of death.

At Black Mountain's Noodle Shop.

It was located in Jianzhou and was a small shop. The walls were painted completely black and seemed too oily to attract customers, and it was very empty.

It was buried deep in a small alley, so it was hard to find unless you were a regular customer.

It was getting dark and the boss sat by himself in the shop. He sat at the door and smoked a cigarette. His wrinkled face seemed to have seen many things in life and was very sharp eyed.

Sometimes a few people would pass by the entrance and he wouldn't even lift his head. He seemed to know that none of these people were here to really order a bowl of noodles.

DA DA DA.

He could hear footsteps coming his way. Two men.

The boss soon saw two pairs of feet appear in front of him.

"Boss, are you already closed?"

The boss narrowed his eyes slightly. "Gentlemen, you want to eat noodles?"

"That's right. A bowl of longevity noodles, please."

The boss nodded, got up, moved aside and let them enter the shop.

"Give me a few minutes."

He then walked into the kitchen.

Jiang Ning walked in with Huang Yuming. There

were only a few tables inside, and each table had bottles of soy sauce and vinegar, but the bottle covers were covered with dust.

Huang Yuming pulled a chair out, dusted it off and let Jiang Ning sit down. He looked towards the kitchen.

"Boss, how long will the noodles take?"

"Coming!" A voice came from the kitchen and it sounded friendly. "I've opened this shop for several decades now and I've always only gotten regular customers. I'm so surprised that I've got new customers today! It really makes me happy."

They could hear the sound of the fire in the kitchen, then the sizzling sound of the noodles hitting the water.

"Wait a while, please! The longevity noodles are almost done!" the boss called out from behind the kitchen. His friendly face earlier instantly fell and became both sinister and scheming.

His footsteps were very light. He turned the fire to its maximum so that the water would start boiling noisily, then ran towards the back door.

Run!

His type of shop only had regular customers, and without the introduction of a regular customer, he wouldn't get any new customer.

Even though Jiang Ning had said all the right things earlier, the boss was still on high alert.

In this line, you couldn't afford to let your guard down at all. You would be dead meat!

He pushed the door open and tried to run. But just after two steps, he immediately froze and there was murder all over his face.

"Who on earth are you?!"

"Boss, aren't you going to make us longevity noodles? If you don't make them, then you'll die tonight!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Humph, nobody knows who's going to die yet!"

Black Mountain flicked his wrist and sent several daggers flying out.

Swoosh!

Swoosh!

Swoosh!

Brother Gou and the rest immediately dodged the daggers. They hit a nearby metal shelf, causing a clanging sound and gave off a few sparks.

"He's a skilled fighter!" Brother Gou exclaimed. His voice didn't carry fear or an urge to back off. Instead, he sounded excited.

He clenched his fists violently and became like a fierce bull as he ran towards Black Mountain.

"You're asking for it!" Black Mountain laughed coldly. He didn't expect to be surrounded like this, but he wasn't nervous either. He raised his hands and sent a fist out to meet with Brother Gou's.

BAM!

Brother Gou was pushed several steps back and his fist was numb.

This man was really a highly skilled fighter!

"Number 2! Number 8! Number 9! Let's go!" Brother Gou ignored the numbness in his fist and roared as he made another dash. "Formation technique!"

The four of them immediately transformed as they attacked from both sides while Number 9 put his

palms together and got ready in case Black Mountain decided to escape from the back.

Brother Gou swung his fists again and didn't care if he would be injured or even be killed.

He was born to fight!

BOOOM!

The moment the four of them coordinated themselves, Black Mountain could feel the difference.

Black Mountain moved half a step back as he blocked Brother Gou's fist, sent a kick towards Number 2, then crouched low with one hand on the ground as he spun himself like a top and sent another kick towards Number 8.

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

He managed to fight off three of them all by himself again.

He was really powerful!

"Can't believe that you guys even know how to coordinate yourselves," Black Mountain scoffed. This was the first time he had met people like this.

There were many who knew how to coordinate attacks, especially among brothers, who were born with this ability to coordinate with one another. One would attack and the other would defend, so they behaved like one person even though they were two

separate humans.

But the men in front of him were clearly not born with this ability. They could coordinate purely out of training.

Black Mountain could tell at one glance.

"Old man, you're not bad!" Brother Gou yelled and got more and more excited. "But you're not going anywhere today!"

He gave a low shout as he dashed towards Black Mountain again. This time, all four of them made their move at the same time. Even Number 9 launched an attack.

That was because they had already confirmed that Black Mountain's ability wasn't any weaker than the four of them. In fact, he was stronger.

So they could only give it their best shot!

Even if they died!

KEBABOOOM!

The battle was on!

The fight became explosive and aggressive in an instant.

Four of them attacked viciously and used the attack side of their formation technique to its maximum. They pretty much gave up on defence and wanted to rely on repeated aggressive attacks to make Black Mountain collapse.

This was the strongest opponent they had met to date.

Black Mountain seemed to be on the losing end compared to the four surrounding him, but he kept a confident expression on and didn't expose any flaws.

But the shock in his eyes was growing.

These four men were clearly not very well built for martial arts. How did they manage to reach this level?

He had trained his fists for several decades before reaching the level he was at right now. The young men in front of him right now were really terrifying.

"This will not do. If this goes on, I'm going to be the one who ends up dying!" Black Mountain thought to himself.

There was a cold glint in Black Mountain's eyes. When it came to adrenaline, he wasn't going to be able to defeat these four men. The four of them were getting bolder and bolder, and the gleam in their eyes was brighter and brighter, so he couldn't help but feel shocked.

Weren't these fellows afraid to die?

Run!

He immediately changed tactics.

He threw a Long Fist punch out. One fist sent Number 2 flying, another palm hit Brother Gou's wrist and weakened his punching power.

"HAA!" He gave a loud shout and he became like a moving mountain as he stumbled towards Number 8.

Mountain Impact!

BOOOOOOOOOOOOM...

Number 8 only felt his blood rush to his chest. There was a booming sound in his chest that resounded in his brain.

PFFFFT...

Number 8 went flying as he sprayed a mouthful of blood. His face paled instantly.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Number 8!" Number 9 roared loudly as his eyes widened in anger and he swung his fists once more. "Go to hell!"

BAM!

Black Mountain was not alarmed at all. His stance looked like he was about to move back, but instead, he spread his arms out and pushed Number 9 away. His wrists exploded with power and sent Number 9 stumbling backwards.

"Humph, you youngsters want to kill me, huh?" Black Mountain snorted when he saw how all four of them had to back off. "If you all had the chance to train for another two years, I might die here today. But now, none of you is a match for me!"

He then turned to run.

He disappeared into the darkness almost immediately.

"Oh no, he's gotten away!"

"Damn it! Chase after him!"

"Chase after him! Even if we die we have to get him!"

Brother Gou climbed to his feet and didn't even bother to wipe the blood on his mouth. His eyes were all red and he was about to give chase.

BAM!

Suddenly, there was a loud thud as a shadow came flying through the air.

Brother Gou immediately ducked to one side and

thought that was a gunny sack.

"Ahh..."

There was a howl and the wolves realized that it was Black Mountain!

How did he end up flying back here?

Black Mountain was on the ground and his face was filled with terror, as if he had just seen a ghost. He couldn't hide the horror in his eyes at all.

"No, that's impossible! Who are you?!"

He spat out the blood in his mouth and tried to calm himself down. This one punch, just ONE punch, nearly spelt the end of him.

He didn't even have time to react. He had no idea where this person came from or when he even made an attack.

"You don't have the right to know."

A figure walked out from the shadows.

Jiang Ning!

He had his hands behind his back as he looked down at Black Mountain. Those eyes sparkled as brightly as the stars in the darkness. These same eyes seemed to be able to read people's hearts and strike deep terror from within each person.

Black Mountain instantly became nervous. He clenched his teeth, slammed a palm on the ground and jumped back onto his feet.

"Go to hell!" he roared as he stomped on the ground

and gave off a series of blasts. His presence was very different now.

"Mountain Impact!"

It was this technique again. Number 8's face paled. This was the technique that sent him flying earlier.

But Jiang Ning didn't even budge when he saw Black Mountain charge at him.

BAM!!!

There was a tremendous blast as Black Mountain struck Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning remained where he was, while Black Mountain staggered several steps backwards before he could steady himself.

"This...this is not possible!" Black Mountain exclaimed. There was blood all over his mouth and beard. He didn't believe it and simply couldn't believe it.

How was Jiang Ning so powerful?

He was seeing things!

"Mountain Impact?" Jiang Ning said quietly. "I thought you were really some fighter who is highly skilled in Bajiquan. But it looks like you just learnt one technique halfway and you tried to con me with that?"

Jiang Ning suddenly moved. The moment his feet moved, it felt like mountains were collapsing and the ground was breaking apart.

That stance alone made everyone's hair stand on

end.

"I'll show you what Mountain Impact really is! Watch carefully!"

SWOOOOOSH...

Ear deafening blasts came from the ground, then a shadow dashed towards Black Mountain like a shell. His shoulders came down and seemed to just touch Black Mountain's chest lightly, but the force it unleashed was like the high tide.

It surged high and crashed hard!

CRAAAAACK...

That was the sound of bones cracking!

"AHHH!"

Black Mountain howled in pain as his chest sank right in. He was like a kite whose string was broken and flew a hundred feet out.

The moment he crashed on the ground, he kept spewing blood and didn't even dare to breathe too hard.

He looked in horror at Jiang Ning and all his fingers were trembling!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"You..."

He had never imagined that someone else would use the technique he was so proud of to defeat him with just one move.

Even the wolves watching were dumbfounded and they all forgot the pain of their injuries.

They had renewed their understanding of Jiang Ning's full capabilities once more.

This guy was really too damned powerful!

Was there no limit to Jiang Ning's fists?!

"Did you see that?" Jiang Ning walked over calmly to Black Mountain, as if he had thrown the most ordinary punch earlier. "That's what you call Mountain Impact."

"You...how did you learn this? That's impossible! Nobody knows Bajiquan anymore...it's impossible..." Black Mountain's lips were trembling.

Black Mountain only learnt the form of this technique but not the spirit of it.

It was already not bad to reach his current standard, but his was crap compared to Jiang Ning's.

This wasn't possible!

"Take him away." Jiang Ning couldn't be bothered to talk to him and walked back to the noodle shop.

Black Mountain had broken at least five or six ribs and had to be careful even when breathing. He was now kneeling in front of Jiang Ning and didn't dream of escaping anymore.

He was too terrifying!

Jiang Ning was the most terrifying man he had ever met.

There was no point in thinking about escaping in front of Jiang Ning.

Before your feet could move, Jiang Ning's fist would have killed you.

"The mission to kill an employee of Lin Group came from here, right?" asked Jiang Ning directly.

Black Mountain was a little stunned. Then he nodded his head.

Hiding anything from Jiang Ning would only cause himself more pain.

"Who gave this mission?"

"You know our rules," Black Mountain's expression changed. "We cannot reveal our clients."

"Rules?"

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes and suddenly became silent. His silence made Black Mountain even more nervous.

The pressure he felt in his heart rose to its peak!

"It was someone named Lin Feng!" Black Mountain quickly blurted out when he sensed that Jiang Ning was really going to kill him.

"I'm not sure exactly who he is. But he put up \$100,000 to kill an ordinary person, and there are lots of people who would take this sort of job."

He had no idea how someone whose life was only worth \$100,000 would make a terrifying person like Jiang Ning hunt him down.

Even if someone offered tens of millions to kill someone close to Jiang Ning, nobody would dare to take the mission.

Jiang Ning let out a snort when he heard Lin Feng's name.

After Lin Qiang was sentenced to jail, Lin Feng disappeared. He had tried to seek refuge with the Yu family but they were wiped out by Lu Qian, so Lin Feng completely disappeared after that.

Jiang Ning had never bothered himself with such small fry. He didn't expect Lin Feng to come up with such a wicked idea.

He was still hoping to destroy Lin Group till today!

Now that Jiang Ning knew who it was, then this case was easy to settle.

Jiang Ning glanced down at Black Mountain. Black Mountain's face immediately paled and he couldn't hide the fear in his heart.

"I'm part of Assassins Group, so if you kill me, the group will keep sending people to kill you!" he said quickly. "I believe you know this rule of ours."

Rules again?

To Jiang Ning, rules were meant to be broken!

He snorted coldly and didn't say anything. He took his phone out and dialed a strange number.

The other side rang twice and picked up.

"Tell your king to come to the phone," said Jiang Ning calmly. "Tell him an old friend is looking for him."

After a moment, the other side stiffly asked Jiang Ning to wait.

Black Mountain felt his heart skip a beat.

King?

Was Jiang Ning referring to that king?

The terrifying man who stood at the top of the world of assassins?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

How could Jiang Ning know that man? And how could he even get in contact with him? Even members of the group like himself had no right to contact him.

"Impossible..." Black Mountain murmured. "I must have guessed wrongly. This can't be true."

This was definitely impossible.

That man was a king to their world. There was no one greater than him.

It was already difficult enough to hear anything about this man, never mind contact him.

Black Mountain shook his head and kept mumbling, "Impossible. I won't believe it."

But suddenly a voice came out from Jiang Ning's phone.

"It's you."

It was a low and hoarse voice that carried a tinge of anger.

Black Mountain had never heard the voice of that king, but the way this voice spoke was frightening in itself. There was even a murderous air around his voice. If it wasn't that king, then who was it?

He was completely stunned.

His mind went blank and there was a ringing in his ears, as if his soul had left his body.

"It's me," Jiang Ning answered equally simply. "Your folks are really bold, finding trouble with me time and again."

The other side didn't respond.

"Aren't you afraid that I'll kill off all the Gold Level Assassins that you have?"

BOOOM.

These words were like thunder crashing on Black Mountain's head and he was nearly frightened to death.

Kill off every Gold Level Assassin?

Jiang Ning was really confident!

He was really audacious!

Did Jiang Ning know who he was talking to? That was the king of the world of professional killers! The king that was above them all and the king that nobody dared to offend!

Jiang Ning actually dared to say that he was going to kill all of his Gold Level Assassins. He was really arrogant.

"Who offended you?"

This question alone made Black Mountain feel completely numb.

He could hear that the king was making a compromise and was wary of Jiang Ning!

"Remember the name Donghai. If any of your people dare to set foot in Donghai again, I'll look for you."

Jiang Ning hung up after that.

Black Mountain remained kneeling as his entire

body shuddered and his teeth chattered. He looked at Jiang Ning, then quickly lowered his head and dared not meet Jiang Ning's gaze.

Those were definitely the most terrifying eyes in the whole world.

These eyes would make one lose any courage one had.

"Please don't kill me," begged Black Mountain.

Jiang Ning quietly replied, "I won't kill you, but you have to send out a mission for me. Kill Lin Feng!"

He casually pointed to a filthy rag on the table. "That's the reward."

Jiang Ning then got up and didn't even take a second glance at Black Mountain. He knew that this noodle shop would no longer exist, and Black Mountain wouldn't escape death either. That king wouldn't let Black Mountain off for offending Jiang Ning.

"Thank..."

Jiang Ning disappeared before he could even finish his sentence.

He remained kneeling on the floor as the terror in his heart had not faded yet. Jiang Ning was really way too terrifying!

Meanwhile, in an ancient castle somewhere in Europe, the man who just put down the phone looked fairly nasty.

He didn't expect Jiang Ning to call him, and didn't expect Jiang Ning to threaten him so directly!

"Kill off all my Gold Level Assassins?" he snorted.
"You've already killed so many of them anyway!"

He then turned and told a blonde haired lady, "Send instructions to investigate this place called Donghai, and pull out all the missions targeted at this city."

"Do you want to flag all these missions?"

"No! Remove all the missions! Do not offend these targets anymore and refuse any missions to kill them! I don't care how much money it takes!" the man said directly.

There was no way he was going to offend that man.

He didn't have that many Gold Level Assassins left in the group!

"Also, wipe out that contact point!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The blonde haired lady was surprised. "Is it that man?"

The man scoffed. "Besides him, who else dares to speak to me like this? Don't offend this lunatic."

He didn't understand why someone like Jiang Ning would suddenly return to a tiny city and be involved with a company that was only worth a few hundred million. Ten of such companies wasn't even equivalent to one of Jiang Ning's fingers.

"Is he that scary?"

"Scary?" the man replied. "He's not just scary. In the world of illegal dealings, NEVER EVER offend this man!"

Even though he had said before that he wanted a showdown with Jiang Ning, he never really did it because he knew that if he tried, then he was definitely going to die. And once he died, whether Jiang Ning was injured or not didn't matter anymore.

"But the other people in the group will be unhappy."

The blonde haired lady was like a femme fatale as she wrapped herself around him.

"Humph, let those idiots go ahead and walk into the fire themselves then. I only want you, darling."

The two of them fell onto the bed.

.....

Jianzhou.

Lin Feng had been hiding here for more than a

month now.

He had rented an old apartment and locked himself inside because he didn't dare to go out.

He thought that it would be safe in Jianzhou since the Yang family and the five tigers of Jianzhou were here, so nobody would dare to make trouble here.

But all five tigers died in one night!

The Yang family was wiped out and vanished into thin air.

Lin Feng was so frightened that he dared not go out at all and continued to live one day at a time.

There was once he couldn't stand it anymore, so he found a small alley to satisfy his needs. He had found out from the prostitute by accident that there was a way to pay for a professional killer to kill whoever he wanted.

He took note of that.

Lin Feng wanted to take revenge on Jiang Ning, Lin Yuzhen and everyone in the Lin family. He even wanted to destroy Lin Group, but since he was only left with a few hundred thousand bucks, there was no way he could afford to order the killing of Jiang Ning and the rest since they were such high profile people.

So he thought of an even more wicked method of destroying Lin Group!

He saw the news reported that Lin Group had lost quite a bit because of this supposed suicide, and it had also affected the morale of the workers. Lin Feng was so elated to see this.

"Lin Yuzhen, Jiang Ning, did you two think that I can't do anything about you guys anymore?"

Lin Feng threw his head back and laughed coldly. "I only spent \$100,000 and I could still make Lin Group suffer tremendously!"

DOONG DOONG DOONG.

Someone was knocking on his door.

Lin Feng shuddered and instantly became vigilant.

"Who is it!"

"Food delivery!"

Lin Feng relaxed when he heard this.

He had been relying on food delivery during this time and didn't dare to step out of the house. The floor of the apartment was covered with all sorts of takeout boxes and there was a weird smell.

Lin Feng opened the door slightly and looked out warily. After he confirmed it was a food delivery man, he opened the door and took the packet of food from the man.

He looked down at the food and complained, "What's going on? I ordered pig blood noodles, why is there nothing but clear soup?"

Lin Feng was very upset. In order to save money, he hadn't touched meat in ages. He had finally decided to order a bowl of pig blood noodles, but there was no trace of pig blood in the bowl at all.

He even opened it up to show the delivery man that he must have made a mistake.

The delivery man didn't say anything. He just suddenly took a step forward, closed the door behind him, then slid a dagger out from his sleeve and slashed it across Lin Feng's throat.

PFFFT!

Blood spurted everywhere and some of it coagulated in the soup.

"Now there's pig blood!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The delivery man looked up. It was Black Mountain!

He pulled a filthy rag from his pocket and looked at Lin Feng's horrified face as he stuffed it down his throat. "Your life is only worth this filthy rag!"

He then left the apartment and disappeared.

Lin Feng collapsed onto the floor and started convulsing. He never imagined that he would die like this.

Just before dying, an image of himself dying flashed through his mind...his body was rotting among the pile of used takeout boxes and gave off a terrible stench, but nobody would discover him...

Right now, Donghai's defence and security was going up by another level!

The second batch of men who had passed the first stage of training had all been deployed. Huang Yuming did not slack off when it came to ensuring that Donghai was safe.

The safety of Lin Group and its workers was of utmost importance!

After this incident, Lin Group's workers didn't end up feeling terrified or fearful. Instead, this made them realize how important they were to Jiang Ning and the Lin family.

When Jiang Ning sent Lin Yuzhen to the office the next morning, her entire table was filled with application letters.

"CEO Lin, everyone here has applied for the position to expand the company into the southeast region." Xiaozhao's eyes were a little teary and she was so

touched as she continued, "There are even some who said that if they can't get the chance to join the team to expand into the southeast region, then they'll go wherever you send them, regardless of whether it's another region in the country or some really tough place in the world!"

Lin Yuzhen looked at the applications on her desk and didn't say anything for a long time.

She was equally touched.

Lin Group was not a company that belonged to her family nor to Jiang Ning. It was a company that everyone had fought to build together!

"Tell them that I'm really very grateful to them!" said Lin Yuzhen very sincerely.

After looking through all the applications, Lin Yuzhen still felt very emotional. Jiang Ning sat on the sofa and laughed as he poured her a cup of tea.

"Jiang Ning, I suddenly realized that I've embarked on a huge project, and it's a very meaningful project."

"Did you only just realize that?" Jiang Ning asked with a laugh. "But wifey, I have to remind you. This sort of huge project is very tiring and you will run into all sorts of problems and troubles. Does this scare you?"

"No," Lin Yuzhen shook her head confidently. "As long as you're around, I won't be scared."

She looked at Jiang Ning, then suddenly reached a hand out and held onto his arm.

"Jiang Ning, You won't leave my side, right?"

Jiang Ning didn't know why Lin Yuzhen was suddenly asking him about this. Hadn't he already told her a long time ago that he wouldn't?

This funny little girl was still in despair some months ago about having to marry him, and now she couldn't bear to be apart from him.

He laughed a little. "No, I won't leave you."

No way.

After a pause, Jiang Ning asked her, "But what would you do if someone tries to snatch me away from you?"

He looked at Lin Yuzhen and asked her very carefully and seriously, "If a woman, a very outstanding woman, suddenly appears, will you give me up?"

Lin Yuzhen was shocked by this question.

She suddenly felt nervous.

She looked at Jiang Ning and her lips moved, but she didn't know what to say.

It seemed as though this woman really existed and would appear in no time. This sudden nervousness and pressure made Lin Yuzhen very worried.

"Is she very outstanding?" she asked as she bit her lips. She didn't seem very confident.

If a woman that even Jiang Ning described as outstanding really appeared, should she let go of him?

Jiang Ning was so outstanding, so only the most

outstanding woman was worthy of him.

"Very outstanding," Jiang Ning nodded very seriously.

His serious expression made Lin Yuzhen a little cross. How could he...compliment another woman in front of her?

"Then...then I'm going to become more outstanding than her!" She started getting anxious and quickly said, "I'm not going to let her snatch you away!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning couldn't help but burst out laughing when he saw how anxious Lin Yuzhen looked.

"What are you laughing about? You think I can't beat her?" Lin Yuzhen pouted and became even more indignant.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything and pulled Lin Yuzhen towards himself.

Before Lin Yuzhen could say anything, he bent down and kissed Lin Yuzhen on the lips.

"MMM..."

Lin Yuzhen's mind instantly went blank.

This happened too suddenly and she wasn't prepared yet...

But it seemed like she didn't really need to prepare herself either.

After a while, Jiang Ning let go of her. Lin Yuzhen's face and neck were all red and she couldn't wait to hide herself in a hole.

She was really too shy.

"Done. Now we've sealed this deal. Since you have left your mark on me, then I'm yours for the rest of my life," said Jiang Ning very seriously. "Miss Lin, please take care of me for the rest of my life."

Lin Yuzhen stared at Jiang Ning. How was this fellow able to touch her heart with just a few words?

"Mr Jiang." She took a deep breath. "Please take care of me for the rest of my life too."

Lin Yuzhen was sure that she had really fallen for Jiang Ning now.

The two of them continued to look into each other's eyes and the atmosphere was different from before. The temperature of the room seemed to be rising and rising.

The feeling of kissing wasn't too bad, and Jiang Ning's lips were sweet too, thought Lin Yuzhen to herself.

RIIIIING!

Lin Yuzhen turned her head and didn't dare to meet Jiang Ning's passionate gaze anymore when the phone rang.

"M-my phone is ringing."

She pulled herself out from Jiang Ning's arms. When did she end up here?!

Lin Yuzhen quickly straightened her clothes out and walked to her desk. It was a call from Ye Qingwu.

"Qingwu!" she exclaimed in surprise. "You've finally called me!"

Jiang Ning quietly listened as he tasted the faint fragrance of lipstick on his lips. It didn't seem as sweet as the ice cream from the last time.

"The ad for our new product?" Lin Yuzhen thought about it for a while, then turned to ask Jiang Ning, "Where do you think is a good place to film an ad for our new product?"

"Let's film it in Jianzhou," suggested Jiang Ning. "The beach and the scenery is not bad, I think it's

quite suitable."

Lin Yuzhen immediately replied, "Qingwu, let's do it in Jianzhou. The beach there is quite suitable for our ad, and we could take the chance to holiday for a bit!"

Lin Yuzhen was pretty excited after hanging up.

Lin Group's new product was ready and they were going to launch it soon. So before that, they wanted a brand spokesperson to promote their latest product.

There was nobody more suitable than a popular singer like Ye Qingwu.

Besides, Lin Yuzhen was confident that their new product could cause a new trend in the market, and it would fully stabilize Lin Group's position in the southeast region's market.

"Will you go too?" Lin Yuzhen asked Jiang Ning.

"Nope." Jiang Ning shook his head.

When he saw the disappointment on Lin Yuzhen's face, he added on, "Not unless you buy a really nice swimsuit."

Lin Yuzhen was about to ask why. After hearing Jiang Ning's remark, her face reddened again.

The redness on her face earlier hadn't even faded yet!

She scoffed and pretended she hadn't heard anything. She sat back down on her chair and started working, but her head was full of which type of swimsuit Jiang Ning would fancy.

Of course Jiang Ning was going along to Jianzhou.

Lin Group was now advancing into the southeast region, and their target wasn't only the city of Jianzhou. Once the product took off, it would cause unrest among the other companies.

When that happened, then someone else was probably going to make trouble for the company again.

When it came to fighting for market share, nobody would give you a chance just because you were a nice person. In this dog eat dog world, only the strongest survived regardless of which industry you were in!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Lin Yuzhen was kindhearted and couldn't do anything malicious or scheming. That was Jiang Ning's job.

Lin Group put up posters to advertise for their new product all over every major city in the southeast.

The marketing department put in their best efforts and even sent their best team to be in charge of the promotion efforts in the southeast.

Many people were attracted to the mysterious poster, especially since it was revealed that a popular celebrity was going to be their brand spokesperson, which made the consumers even more excited.

The marketing team put up a competition online for the public to guess who would be the next brand spokesperson. The winner stood a chance to get their hands on the new product first as well as a cash prize of \$50,000!

There was a sudden frenzy in the southeast.

The votes online were unstoppable. They weren't just gunning for the prize, but they were also showing support for their favorite singer.

This promotional activity was fairly successful and attracted a lot of attention to the upcoming product.

Jiang Ning was very pleased and sent a huge amount of reward money to the marketing department, making the staff feel even more motivated than before.

Who wouldn't work hard when the boss was so generous?

The next step was up to Ye Qingwu.

In Jianzhou.

Jiang Ning was waiting at the airport with Lin Yuzhen. Ye Qingwu flew in directly from Shanghai.

She only brought Wang Wei and her makeup artiste along. Lin Yuzhen settled everything else.

Ye Qingwu was still quite calm when she saw Jiang Ning again, even though she had not forgotten how domineering and charismatic Jiang Ning looked when he taught Su Mingquan a lesson.

Wang Wei had become much more careful around Jiang Ning.

"Mr Jiang!"

He quickly rushed forward, shook Jiang Ning's hands with both hands and bowed very politely before greeting Lin Yuzhen.

This was no joke.

He didn't dare to offend a scary person like Jiang Ning. This man was a thousand times scarier than Su Mingquan.

But of course, as long as he was not an enemy of Jiang Ning's, then he didn't have to worry so much.

It was a world of a difference depending on whether you were a friend or an enemy!

"The film crew is all ready to go, so the rest is up to you, Qingwu!"

Lin Yuzhen happily hooked Ye Qingwu's arm and

they were like sisters even though they hadn't known each other for very long.

The two women chatted happily the whole way, relaxed and enjoying themselves.

Wang Wei sat with his hands on his knees and sat up straight without even daring to move. He was so nervous.

And that was because the driver was Jiang Ning!

Jiang Ning was actually driving the car he was in!

That terrifyingly powerful man!

Meanwhile.

The beaches in Jianzhou's White Sand Bay were famous and was considered the most beautiful beach in the country.

The sea was clear, the sky was blue and the sand was golden.

From afar, the sea and the sky were only separated by one line, and it made one feel at peace.

There were several film crews on the beach because many people would choose to take photos and videos here. Some were for commercial purposes, and some were tourists having fun. They had to record their memories of this beautiful place, otherwise it wouldn't do their trip justice.

The one in charge of shooting the ad poster from Lin Group was Huang Fang. He had been waiting here since a long time ago.

After receiving the cash award from Jiang Ning the

day before, he couldn't sleep all night from excitement.

He had come to the beach before sunrise with the crew to find the best spot. He was going to make sure this ad was perfect!

"Everyone, get ready. CEO Lin is coming with Brother Ning and the rest soon," Huang Fang beamed. "After we're done, I'll treat everyone to a meal!"

He was now able to afford something like this after getting the reward.

"All of you, get out! This spot is ours! Pack up your things and get lost!" a nasty voice suddenly shouted at them from nowhere.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Huang Fang turned and was shocked to see a group of people barge into the area they were standing in to take over their location without even looking at Huang Fang's team.

"Wait!"

Huang Fang immediately ran over when he saw that the other side was going to shift his team's equipment.

"What are you doing? We came here first, so you have to go elsewhere."

The spots here were on a first come first served basis. There were so many empty areas along the beach, but these people insisted on taking their spot. Wasn't that going a little too far?

The leader of the other party looked up at Huang Fang, glanced at the promotional boards at the side and scoffed coldly, "I said get lost, so get lost now! Don't ask for trouble!"

"I can tell that this is the best location, so I'm taking it," he said very simply and sounded rather impatient.

"You're being unreasonable!" Huang Fang got angry.

They weren't in Donghai, but they still couldn't be bullied by others like that.

He had gotten prepared at 4AM and was the first one to find this location. This man here was just being unreasonable and insisted on just snatching the spot.

"That's right, I'm being unreasonable!" the man's face fell. "Don't say I didn't warn you. Get lost now,

otherwise I'm going to smash all your equipment to pieces!"

Huang Fang's expression changed and his crew members were also getting angry.

They had never seen such an arrogant person before!

They were unreasonable, refused to wait in line and wanted to take their spot by force. Now they were even threatening to damage their equipment!

"Don't you dare!" All the crew members immediately guarded their equipment.

Their mission today was extremely important. They had picked this date because they wanted the best weather for the most perfect shoot.

Now that the location was fixed, the time was set and everything was good to go, suddenly someone was now insisting on snatching their spot and threatened to smash their equipment. If they dared to try anything, Huang Fang and his crew was going to fight it out with them!

"Asking for it?" the leader laughed coldly and his expression became very grim now. He waved his hand and said, "Throw all their things into the sea!"

"I'll let you do your photoshoot! IN THE SEA!"

The people behind the men immediately ran forward to snatch the equipment away.

Huang Fang became anxious. "Protect the equipment!"

"I'm going to fight it out with you!" he roared as he

dashed over.

BAM!

The leader smiled maliciously and kicked Huang Fang in the chest. Huang Fang was sent flying and rolled several times in the sand, and his face was covered in sand.

"You guys are seriously tired of living. Don't you know who I am? Who in this area dares to snatch a spot with me?" the leader spat out angrily. "You bloody bastards, get lost now or I'll beat you to death!"

Some of the men ran over to snatch and destroy Huang Fang's equipment, while others clenched their fists and were ready to hit the crew.

Huang Fang and his team protected their equipment and let those punches and kicks land on them. They would rather be hit than to let their equipment be damaged.

"Ahh!" Huang Fang and the other crew members yelled in pain but refused to let go.

"Don't touch my equipment! Don't touch them!" Huang Fang roared with bloodshot eyes. "I said DON'T TOUCH THEM!"

"Bloody hell!" The leader was angry and spat. "You guys really don't understand how things work around here, eh? Looks like I really have to destroy your camera!"

He ran up and kicked Huang Fang from the back ferociously.

Huang Fang immediately howled from the pain and

let go of the camera he was holding onto.

"I'll see how you protect that! HA!" the leader shouted as he kicked the camera. The lens immediately broke and there were fragments all over the sand.

"NO!" Huang Fang was so angry that he seemed to have gone mad and threw a fierce punch at the leader's face. "You bastard! I'm going to fight it out with you!"

BAM!

But as someone who never got involved in fights, he was no match for the leader. He was soon sent sprawling onto the ground again.

"Pfft!" The leader looked down contemptuously at Huang Fang. "Stupid trash, trying to snatch a spot from me? Don't you know I'm Guo Sange? I'm no pushover!"

"Throw all their things into the sea! Anyone who doesn't like us doing that can go into the sea with those things!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Without even looking at Huang Fang, the leader called his men to dismantle the tent that Huang Fang's crew had set up.

"Move the things if you dare."

Suddenly, there was a voice that seemed to draw everyone's attention away. Those men who were about to dismantle the tent felt their bodies shudder, as if they were suddenly hit by a gust of cold wind.

Guo Sange turned and narrowed his eyes. There were a few people walking his way, and the leader was an ordinary looking man.

But the two women behind him made Guo Sange's eyes light up.

He was here to promotional photos and the models hired was already very pretty, but compared to these two women, these models were now super ugly.

Guo Sange immediately laughed.

He had managed to snatch the best spot, and now the other party had also sent models his way.

"Oh my my, hello ladies, are you here to film an ad? What a coincidence! I'm doing a photoshoot too, so why don't you two be my models?" Guo Sange stared straight at Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu as if he hadn't seen Jiang Ning at all. "By the way, your side can't take photos anymore since the camera is spoilt."

He sounded very contemptuous and seemed to be challenging the other side.

Lin Yuzhen didn't say anything. Anger was written all

over her face!

"Brother Ning!" Huang Fang immediately got up when he saw that Jiang Ning was here. He started to blame himself, "I...I didn't manage to block them."

Jiang Ning nodded and patted his shoulder. "You didn't do anything wrong and you've done an excellent job. Go and get ready, we'll be ready to shoot anytime."

Huang Fang glanced at Guo Sange but didn't say anything. He nodded. "Yes, Brother Ning!"

Jiang Ning was here!

Since Jiang Ning said they were going to shoot anytime, then they would definitely be able to finish today!

Guo Sange's expression changed when he saw that Huang Fang and his crew started to set up their equipment once more and even set up the camera that he had already damaged.

He glared at Jiang Ning and said nastily, "Young man, don't you know what's going on?"

"Don't you know that you have to ask me for permission to film an ad on this beach?"

"No I don't." Jiang Ning walked over to Guo Sange. "Since you damaged our camera, then we'll have to use yours."

"You're asking for it!"

Guo Sange snorted coldly. He had never seen anyone want to die so badly. When Jiang Ning came close enough, he sent a kick out towards Jiang

Ning's lower half, and this kick was both fierce and aggressive!

BAM!

But before his leg could extend fully, it was stopped by an oncoming force and there was a cracking sound as his calf bone broke.

Jiang Ning had also sent a kick his way, but Jiang Ning's kick was fiercer and he had kicked Guo Sange's calf directly.

"AHH!" Guo Sange howled in pain and he staggered to one side. Before he could react, Jiang Ning slapped him hard across the face.

PAK!

Guo Sange was sent flying out, then crashed on the sand, rolled a few times and got a whole mouthful of sand.

"PFFT! PFFT!!" He spat as much as possible and howled from the pain. "Kill him! KILL HIM!"

All the men with Guo Sange rushed towards Jiang Ning.

But a few muffled sounds later, the beach seemed to be covered in radishes – there were many holes with someone buried head first!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"UNGGHH UNGGHH!" All of them struggled for a long time before they managed to get themselves out of their hole. There was sand in their noses and mouths, and they had nearly choked to death.

They all coughed violently and their faces were all red. There was a buzzing sound in their heads and they thought they were going to suffocate for that moment.

Guo Sange was now looking at Jiang Ning as if he was looking at a monster.

"You...who the hell are you?" He didn't care about his broken leg. "Don't you know who's the one I'm filming for?!"

Jiang Ning looked at him and his expression darkened. "You don't want to leave?"

Guo Sange felt his heart tremble violently and didn't dare to say anymore.

"Let's go! Hurry up!" He grabbed two men to help him along and they all made a run for it without even taking their equipment along with them.

"Brother Ning, we can use their equipment," said Huang Fang after checking everything. "In fact, their equipment seem better than ours."

Jiang Ning nodded and went to lie down on the beach chair under a large umbrella.

"Then don't waste anymore time, the sun is just right now," he said in a relaxed manner, as if he hadn't just beaten up a whole bunch of idiots moments ago.

Huang Fang got his crew to be on standby to start

the shoot.

Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu walked over to see Jiang Ning comfortably lying on the beach chair.

"This fellow really knows how to enjoy life," Lin Yuzhen scoffed. "Qingwu, I'll go help you to get changed!"

"After the shoot is done, we can play for a while."

The two of them quickly walked towards the changing room. Jiang Ning's eyes were covered by his sunglasses, but they were filled with anticipation.

He had spotted Lin Yuzhen secretly bringing a swimsuit along, but he had no idea what type she bought.

"Brother Ning?"

"What is it?"

Huang Fang smiled sheepishly. "Their camera already has some data, do we leave it inside their memory card?"

"Reformat their memory card."

Why bother keeping it?

If Huang Fang didn't need their equipment, Jiang Ning would have destroyed everything to punish those men for trying to create trouble here.

"Yes, Brother Ning!"

Huang Fang instantly got excited. It was so rewarding to work for Brother Ning!

He got someone to buy drinks for Jiang Ning, then quickly called the crew to make their final checks.

Ye Qingwu had gotten changed and was all made up.

"We're going to start shooting!" Huang Fang yelled into the loudhailer, then it was quiet after that.

Jiang Ning pulled his sunglasses off to look. He froze for a while, then sat up straight.

Ye Qingwu was standing in the sea breeze in a white short dress that showed off her long and straight legs as her hair blew in the wind. She was as beautiful as the scenery behind her.

Jiang Ning noticed that there were several men who were looking at her from afar too.

"Isn't she pretty?" Lin Yuzhen's voice suddenly spoke beside him.

"Just average," Jiang Ning's expression didn't change. "I'm looking forward to what you look like in a swimsuit."

"I didn't bring one."

Lin Yuzhen purposely scoffed and said, "Even if I did, I wouldn't let you see me in it!"

Jiang Ning lay back down on the chair and sighed.

"What now," asked Lin Yuzhen in annoyance.

"I've been looking forward to this day for so many days and nights without being able to sleep or eat well, and now you tell me you didn't bring one." Jiang Ning shook his head and looked so

disappointed. "I suddenly feel like my life is meaningless."

PFFFT.

Lin Yuzhen couldn't hold her laughter in. She rolled her eyes at Jiang Ning, then whispered a little bashfully into his ear, "You are terrible! I brought it, ok? I just don't know if you'd like it."

Her voice got softer and softer.

She had never worn a swimsuit before.

Of course she knew that a woman would look incredibly attractive in a sexy swimsuit, but she had really never worn one before.

"Of course I like it," Jiang Ning replied quickly. "As long as you're wearing it, you look nice in anything, and I'll like anything you wear!"

He looked at Lin Yuzhen and he could already imagine how adorable Lin Yuzhen would look like in a bikini.

"But what if others see her too?" thought Jiang Ning to himself. He decided that he would see her by himself, then get Lin Yuzhen to change out of it once he was done looking at her.

The shoot had started.

Jiang Ning continued to lie on the chair as he drank water. He never lifted his head and didn't look at Ye Qingwu at all.

Instead it was Lin Yuzhen who was staring all starry eyed at Ye Qingwu from the side of the cameras.

Ye Qingwu had an excellent figure. She was pretty with a sweet voice, plus a mesmerizing figure, and that was how she could become a popular singer.

Her poise was perfect for Lin Group's latest skincare product.

"Good! Good!" Huang Fang clapped his hands.
"Excellent! Perfect!"

In order to achieve the best result, Ye Qingwu insisted on shooting more even though Huang Fang already said that the effect was perfect. They only wrapped up the shoot after everyone had unanimously agreed that there was no way to make it better.

They were very sure that after this ad was released, it would cause a frenzy!

Lin Group was going to use this new product to gain market share in the southeast market.

"Jiang Ning!" Lin Yuzhen called out but Jiang Ning didn't respond at all. "Don't tell me this fellow fell asleep!"

The crew were all in awe of him when they heard this. Brother Ning was really a different sort of man!

Ye Qingwu was a big star and she was so pretty, but he actually fell asleep.

There were so many other companies filming ads around them and they were all so distracted by Ye Qingwu that their own models got angry and some of them even threw tantrums.

"Done?" Jiang Ning took off his sunglasses and rubbed his eyes blearily.

He seriously fell asleep.

"Yup. We'll play on the beach for a while? We'll get changed into our swimsuits."

Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu then went to the changing room again.

Jiang Ning was now fully awake.

He started thinking what sort of swimsuit Lin Yuzhen would wear. Would it be a bikini?

In no time.

Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu emerged from the changing room together.

Ye Qingwu was wearing a bikini!

She was a big celebrity!

She actually dared to wear a bikini in public like that?

That was crazy!

Wang Wei and the makeup artist both dropped the bottle of mineral water in their hands. If the paparazzi got a photo of this, Ye Qingwu would make the headlines tomorrow.

Lin Yuzhen was very conservative compared to Ye Qingwu.

Besides exposing her arms and calves, the rest of her was completely covered up.

Jiang Ning stared at Lin Yuzhen as if he couldn't see Ye Qingwu at all. He only had eyes for Lin Yuzhen.

"Yuzhen, look at the way he looks at you," Ye Qingwu quietly said to Lin Yuzhen. "Believe me now? He will always only have eyes for you. I don't know why you insisted that I test him."

"Aren't you afraid that I'd snatch him away from you if he fails the test?"

Lin Yuzhen's face was all red and she gently bit her lips. "You wouldn't do that to me."

Ye Qingwu gave a bright smile and said, "Alright then, I have to get changed. I'll be in trouble if the paparazzi gets a photo."

She noticed Wang Wei and the makeup artist coming her way, but she didn't need them to remind her. She quickly went into the changing room again. It hadn't been long since she was out on the beach, so there was no problem.

Lin Yuzhen looked at how Jiang Ning was just staring at her and slowly made her way over.

This swimsuit didn't look like a swimsuit at all. She might as well have worn a dress.

"Do I...do I look nice?"

"Yes you do," Jiang Ning nodded. "But wifey, are you going scuba diving?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Scuba diving?" Lin Yuzhen took a while to realize what Jiang Ning was talking about. "I don't look nice?"

Jiang Ning actually said that her swimsuit looked more like a diving suit!

Had she covered up too much?

Then again, what did this fellow hope to see?!

"You look nice," Jiang Ning walked over and looked down at Lin Yuzhen but he didn't get to see anything. "Wifey, I've thought about it. I think you can show me after we get home. There are too many bad guys out here and I don't want any of them to see my wife's beautiful figure."

He looked so serious when he said that, so Lin Yuzhen believed him.

"I'll get changed?"

"Yup. Let's go eat and celebrate," Jiang Ning nodded. But all the images in his mind were shattered.

If he had known that Lin Yuzhen had bought a diving suit, he wouldn't have looked forward to today!

Lin Yuzhen had a good figure – did she think Jiang Ning didn't know about that?

Even though her pajamas were loose fitting, when she curled up in Jiang Ning's arms at night to sleep, Jiang Ning could tell!

After Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu got changed, Jiang Ning brought them to Jianzhou's most famous restaurant, Haisen Restaurant, to eat.

Meanwhile.

Inside Haisen Restaurant.

There were many people drinking inside one of the private rooms. It was a party in here.

"CEO Sun! You're really a promising young man! After you take over the Sun family, the southeast region is going to count on you!"

"Exactly! Even though this is supposed to be a test set by the head of the Sun family, I'm sure there will be no problem! Let me toast you another glass, CEO Sun!"

"Once you gain more than 50% of the market, you would have passed your family test! Let me congratulate CEO Sun in advance!"

All of them kept coming to say niceties to Sun Ling, who was seated right at the head of the table. He just waved his hands and put on a humble expression.

"Don't flatter me now," Sun Ling smiled. "I haven't managed to succeed yet, so if I celebrate now and fail later, wouldn't that be a slap in my own face?"

That was what he said, but deep inside he knew very well that failure was not possible.

He had put in so much effort and money, so there was no reason for him to fail.

As the only son of the Sun family, the Sun family was definitely going to him. But the family had given him a test by getting him to manage a cosmetics company. As long as the company could take at least 50% of the southeast region's market share

within two years, he would pass the test.

Two years was almost up, and he already had 40% of the market share.

As long as this last project on his hands was successful, then there was no issue in hitting 50%.

"How could CEO Sun possibly fail?"

"If even CEO Sun fails, then nobody in this entire region can make it!"

Sun Ling liked what he was hearing. He smiled and nodded as he raised his glass and clinked it with everyone.

"Then I hope that everything goes as well as what everyone says! Cheers!"

DOONG DOONG DOONG.

After downing that glass, someone knocked on the door of the private room. Someone walked in and whispered a few things to Sun Ling.

Sun Ling's expression changed slightly and his gaze instantly grew cold.

"What the hell are all of you doing? Can't even get a simple thing done? If this causes delay to the product launch, I'll kill all of you!" he whispered back to the subordinate who came in. Then his expression returned to normal as he looked back at his guests. "Please go ahead and continue drinking. I have to attend to some matters."

"CEO Sun, please go ahead!"

Sun Ling walked out of the room and saw Guo

Sange leaning against the wall at the end of the corridor. He could only stand on one leg and he looked a mess.

"Young Master Sun!" Guo Sange called out as he hopped over quickly on one foot. He almost lost his balance and had to lean against the wall again as he smiled sheepishly.

"What's going on?"

"I let you be in charge of the filming for this ad, so how did you end up with a broken leg?!"

Sun Ling was furious. This ad filming was very important because he didn't have a lot of time left. They only had a few days left before the product launch, so he had spent a lot of money to hire a number of very expensive models.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Young Master Sun, this is not my fault," Guo Sange said through clenched teeth. "I got to White Sand Bay and found a good location to get the best effect, but someone snatched that spot from me!"

If Huang Fang heard this, he would have given Guo Sange a slap because he had never seen someone twist the facts like that.

Guo Sange was the one who tried to snatch the spot, but now he was accusing Huang Fang of doing so.

"Someone snatched that spot from you?"

"Exactly! We had set up everything and already put the equipment and backdrop in place. The models were all made up and changed, just waiting to start. In the end, a group of people came over and just beat us up!" Guo Sange put an angry expression on and continued in an even more upset voice, "We were no match for them and couldn't even keep the equipment. Look at my leg! They broke it just like that!"

"I already said that I worked for you, but they...they still did such a thing!"

"What in the world?!" Sun Ling was even angrier. "In Jianzhou, nobody dares to disregard my family like that!"

If the Yang family was still around and Yang Xiao was still alive, Sun Ling wouldn't dare to say something like that.

Everyone knew how frightening the Yang family was. Yang Xiao was a madwoman and there was once Sun Ling went into hiding for several months because he heard that Yang Xiao had a thing for

him.

But now that the Yangs, Yang Xiao and the five tigers of Jianzhou were gone, the Sun family was the next big family in Jianzhou!

But even before this, nobody dared to disregard the Sun family either. And now someone had actually dared to bully one of his men! Did they think he was a pushover?

"Who were those people?!" Sun Ling demanded.

This project would affect the test his family set for him. He was willing to do anything to pass the test and secure his position as the next head of the family. He had gotten 40% of the market share over the last two years because he had used several underhanded methods.

"I don't know, but there was a sign that read Lin Group..." Guo Sange tried to recall. "I remember the work pass that fellow was wearing wrote Lin Group."

"Lin Group?" Sun Ling's eyes narrowed. "Lin Group from Shengcheng?"

"That's them!"

Sun Ling's expression immediately darkened.

The opponent he was most worried about was this Lin Group. Ever since they had taken Shengcheng, they had started to rise in this region within a very short time.

He had even heard that the Yang family meant to work with this Lin Group. If the Yang family hadn't been suddenly wiped out, then Lin Group might be

even more arrogant now!

Clearly he had no idea that the person who wiped out the Yang family and the five tigers of Jianzhou was Jiang Ning.

The man who married into the Lin family.

"Ho ho, without the Yang family's support, you still want to make waves in the southeast?" Sun Ling started laughing coldly. "I already had plans to deal with you guys, but it looks like you're all tired of living and you've come knocking on my door."

"Young Master Sun!" Guo Sange suddenly gave a shout and pointed at the people at the elevator. He immediately looked furious and clenched his teeth. "That's them! Those people over there!"

"The one who hit me is the man right in front! I'm very sure of it!"

Sun Ling turned to see Jiang Ning and the rest walk out from the elevator and make their way towards the main entrance of the restaurant.

He narrowed his eyes and there was disdain and a chilling air coming out from them.

Anyone who got in his way had to pay a price for doing so!

"That's them? Then I've got to go over and say hello!"

Jiang Ning and the rest walked together towards the restaurant and a waiter came to attend to them immediately.

"Hello sir, table for how many?"

Jiang Ning nodded. "Table for five."

"Please come this way."

The waiter smiled and brought them to a private room. He opened the door for them and showed them in.

With a big celebrity like Ye Qingwu around, Jiang Ning wasn't going to eat in the main dining area. If any fans recognized her, it would be a riot.

After they all sat down, the waiter came with the menu.

"Get us one of all these recommended dishes," Jiang Ning ordered five or six dishes after glancing at the menu.

"Sure, I'll make the order for you."

The food was soon served.

After the door closed behind the waiter, Lin Yuzhen looked at Ye Qingwu.

"You can remove your sunglasses and hat now."

She suddenly felt bad for Ye Qingwu. Even though she was so pretty, she couldn't show her face in public and always had to cover herself well no matter where she went.

Ye Qingwu had to make sure she was well wrapped

up and definitely had to cover her face in public.

She pulled off her sunglasses and exhaled deeply. She looked so helpless.

"That's why I say, it's not bad to be an ordinary person."

The two of them started teasing each other.

Jiang Ning ignored them and turned to Wang Wei. "Do you drink?"

"Y-yes, a little."

Wang Wei was always so nervous around Jiang Ning. He didn't dare to speak too loudly and always followed cautiously behind. He didn't dare to even walk an inch ahead of Jiang Ning.

But after interacting with him, he realized that Jiang Ning didn't put on any airs at all.

He didn't seem different from any other person on the street.

If he hadn't witnessed for himself how amazing Jiang Ning was, he wouldn't have believed that this even tempered man would be so terrifying when he wanted to fight!

"Pour a glass for yourself then, don't tell me I have to pour one for you?" Jiang Ning said with a smile when he saw that Wang Wei was still in a daze.

Wang Wei smiled awkwardly, then opened a bottle of beer and poured it into a glass.

After being in the sun for so long earlier, it was refreshing to drink beer to cool himself down.

Even Lin Yuzhen, Ye Qingwu and her makeup artist couldn't resist and they drank a small bottle each themselves.

"I'm sure the ad is going to have a great effect on the sales," Wang Wei started to open up a little after having a few drinks. "Qingwu and the feel of this product is a match made in heaven. I have a feeling that the moment this ad comes out, the sales are going to explode!"

"Really?" Lin Yuzhen immediately asked with a gleeful look. "You're not lying to me?"

"Trust me, I'm a professional!" Wang Wei nodded seriously.

Lin Yuzhen was even happier to hear this. If the new product could do well this time, then Lin Group's footing in the southeast would be stable.

All the workers had worked so hard to make this happen. If it didn't produce results, then that would greatly affect their morale, and she wasn't going to let that happen.

"Don't worry, Lin Group's new product will definitely gain a huge market share in the southeast!" Wang Wei raised his glass. "CEO Lin, let me congratulate you in advance!"

BAM!

Lin Yuzhen hadn't even picked her glass up yet when someone kicked their room door open.

Ye Qingwu got a shock and she immediately reached for her sunglasses and cap.

Jiang Ning frowned. He was having dinner here and

someone actually dared to kick the door open.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"CEO Lin?"

The person who came in scanned the room and his gaze fell on Ye Qingwu. There was a gleam in his eye as he recognized Ye Qingwu at once. He cursed Lin Group for actually spending enough to hire Ye Qingwu.

But his gaze didn't stop at Ye Qingwu. He started staring straight at Lin Yuzhen. "I didn't expect to run into you here."

Lin Yuzhen was very confused. She had no impression of Sun Ling at all.

Besides, Sun Ling's way of barging into the room was clearly disrespectful towards her.

"Who are you?" Lin Yuzhen looked a little angry. "It's not very classy of you to barge in like this."

Sun Ling didn't care. He smiled faintly and said, "CEO Lin, that's not quite right of you to say that. Isn't it only correct for an old friend to come over to say hello?"

"Looks like CEO Lin doesn't remember me anymore. But you've left a very deep impression on me!"

Sun Ling completely ignored the rest of the people in the room and focused on watching the change in Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu's faces.

He was going to purposely make things difficult for Lin Yuzhen in front of others, and he wanted Ye Qingwu to see that the company she was representing didn't even have the right to talk back to him!

"I went for that networking party in Shengcheng

too." The smile on his face carried much contempt and mocking. "I also know that the Young Master of the Yang family, Yang Luolin, had purposely arranged for the party so as to get to know CEO Lin. But what a pity, the Yang family is no longer around."

Lin Yuzhen was even more disgusted by the way he spoke so sarcastically.

"Please leave the room," Lin Yuzhen immediately chased him out.

But Sun Ling ignored her words. He picked up an empty glass and poured himself a glass of wine as he politely continued, "CEO Lin, you don't have to be angry. Isn't it better that the Yang family is gone? I heard that CEO Lin doesn't like Yang Luolin, and you know? I didn't like him either."

"What do you want?" Lin Yuzhen asked impatiently.

"Ho ho, nothing really, I'm just here to say hello to you," Sun Ling said as he poured himself another glass. "I heard that Lin Group is going to launch a new product, and I believe your product launch is happening next week?"

"What a coincidence! I have a new product on hand too, and I'll be launching it on the same day as you. Don't you think it's such a coincidence?"

Lin Yuzhen's expression started looking nasty.

"We've also filmed some promotional ads and of course, even though our models can't be compared to this lady over here, the effect would be good too," Sun Ling ignored Lin Yuzhen's expression and continued to agitate her. "I wonder if Lin Group's product will just die out when both products are

launched at the same time...if that happens, don't be angry, alright?"

"Oh also, can Lin Group afford to pay this lady over here for being your spokesperson? If you can't afford it, I could help a little."

Sun Ling was clearly here to challenge them!

He was going to launch his product on the same day as Lin Group and wanted to compare their ad with Ye Qingwu's?

Those third rate models he hired couldn't be compared to Ye Qingwu at all.

BAM!

Lin Yuzhen couldn't stand it. She slammed the table, "That's quite enough."

"Not enough at all!" Sun Ling laughed loudly. He was even happier to see that Lin Yuzhen was angry and just went all out. "CEO Lin, I'm here to tell you that Lin Group can forget about using your new product to enter the southeast market!"

"Without the Yang family's support, your company can't hold up for even a few months. You guys are too weak compared to me, Sun Ling."

He shook his head and his face was filled with disdain.

He had a million and one ways to ruin Lin Group's product launch.

If he wanted to attack Lin Group, he was going to start by attacking Lin Yuzhen first!

"So you said you attended the networking event in Shengcheng?" Jiang Ning suddenly spoke up after being silent all this while. He glanced at Sun Ling and stood up. "Then, do you remember me?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Sun Ling turned to look at Jiang Ning and narrowed his eyes.

He really had no impression of Jiang Ning.

At the networking event, it wasn't long before Sun Ling had hooked up with a manager from some other company and after making eyes at each other over tea, they proceeded to a hotel room upstairs.

He didn't get to see Jiang Ning teach Yang Luolin a lesson and didn't see how Jiang Ning had fiercely forced cake down Yang Luolin's throat.

"What are you even?" Sun Ling scoffed. "I'm talking to CEO Lin, so it's not your place to cut in!"

He pointed a finger at Jiang Ning very rudely.

CRAAACK!

Jiang Ning suddenly reached a hand out to pinch that finger with some strength and Sun Ling's finger broke with a crack.

"AHH!" Sun Ling didn't think Jiang Ning would do that.

And he didn't expect him to be so aggressive!

He howled loudly, and the sound could even be heard from outside the room.

There were many customers in the main dining area who suddenly fell silent for a few seconds because they all thought they heard a terrible howl. But then they didn't hear anything after that, so they continued eating and talking again.

"Ooooooh..." Sun Ling's body was all bent and the

pain made his face turn pale. "You! Let go of me!"

"Now you'll have a deep impression, right?"

Jiang Ning didn't let go of Sun Ling's finger. Jiang Ning pushed gently such that Sun Ling had to move his body lower and lower and finally ended up kneeling on the floor.

Otherwise his finger would be broken right off!

THUD.

Sun Ling's knees hit the floor with a loud thud and the customers were silent for a second once more as they all looked towards Jiang Ning's room at the same time.

"From the Sun family, eh? We welcome open and fair competition from other companies in the same industry," Jiang Ning said calmly as he looked down at Sun Ling. "But if you want try dirty tricks, then I'll be more than happy."

Jiang Ning's eyes looked like he was staring at his prey. It instantly saw the depths of Sun Ling's heart and Sun Ling felt a terrible fear rising.

This lunatic!

"You..." Sun Ling clenched his teeth. The pain from his broken finger made his entire body tremble. "You will pay the price for doing this!"

"Ahh!" He couldn't help but yelp in pain again. Even his lips were white now.

Wang Wei sat up straight and even his breathing quickened.

He was here!

Again!

This was the real Jiang Ning!

The man who was so domineering that it made one's blood rush!

He had actually clinked glasses with this man earlier!

"I'm looking forward to it," Jiang Ning said with a smile. He wasn't angry at all, and the disdain and calmness on his face made Sun Ling angry, but Sun Ling didn't dare to say anything.

This man was definitely a lunatic.

Jiang Ning let go of Sun Ling. He didn't want a piece of trash to ruin everyone's mood over dinner.

"Get lost."

Jiang Ning returned to his seat, and Sun Ling finally stood up as his legs trembled. He clenched his teeth as he glared angrily at Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen, but he didn't dare to say anything, so he quickly ran out while clutching his finger.

When everyone in the main dining area saw someone come out from the room and clutching his finger, so they figured something must have happened inside the room.

"Did you see that? There's a mark on his knees, so he must have knelt earlier."

"Oh please, the sound was so loud! Did you think I was deaf? Of course he knelt earlier!"

"As the saying goes, men's knees are made from gold and they only kneel before God and their father. The man inside must be his dad, and he just taught his son a lesson."

.....

Sun Ling could hear the murmuring of the crowd and his face was all red from anger. He wanted to kill someone now!

He spun around violently and all the customers shut up and went back to eating their food.

"Lin Yuzhen! Lin Group!" Sun Ling clenched his teeth. "I'm going to make sure you get out of this region!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Sun Ling left the restaurant.

Back in Jiang Ning's room.

Jiang Ning was all calm, as if nothing had happened earlier, and he put some food in Lin Yuzhen's bowl.

"This one tastes pretty good, you should try it."

"Jiang Ning," Lin Yuzhen was a little worried. "Who is this Sun Ling? Why is he suddenly attacking us?"

"You don't have to be bothered by him. If a dog barks at you, are you going to argue with it?" said Jiang Ning with a smile.

He had never even heard of this fellow's name before, since he wasn't important at all. So why would Jiang Ning be bothered?

Since they were from the same industry, then Jiang Ning wouldn't have said anything if they had lost after a fair competition between the two companies. But if Sun Ling wanted to play dirty...

Then Jiang Ning was really going to be happy about it.

The last thing he feared was dirty tricks.

"But..."

"Just eat," Jiang Ning shook his head. "Don't let him spoil your mood, it's not worth it."

He then looked at the rest at the table. "Don't just sit there, is the food bad?"

"Oh no it's delicious!" said Wang Wei quickly.

He put down the glass he lifted up and wondered if he would be able to clink glasses with Jiang Ning ever again.

Since Jiang Ning had said so, then they were just going to resume eating.

Lin Yuzhen was also quite used to this. As long as Jiang Ning was around, she wasn't afraid of anything.

After the meal, Jiang Ning brought everyone back to the hotel to have a good rest.

After returning to the room, Ye Qingwu came knocking on the door.

"Qingwu, what's wrong?" Lin Yuzhen asked when she saw that it was Ye Qingwu at the door.

She was just about to take a rest.

"Where's Jiang Ning?"

Ye Qingwu walked in and Jiang Ning was seated on the sofa.

"I know who that Sun Ling is. He's the next head of the Sun family and it won't do anyone well to offend him," said Ye Qingwu. "Since you've broken his finger today, he's not going to let it go."

Jiang Ning looked up and laughed, "Worse than offending the Su family of Shenghai?"

Jiang Ning didn't have any regard for the Su family either. He didn't kill Su Mingquan only because he had another purpose in mind and not because he was afraid of the Su family. If he had no use for Su Mingquan, he would have killed him that day.

"No," replied Ye Qingwu. "The Sun family isn't much, but Sun Ling's two older sisters have all married into powerful families in the north."

"That's the more troublesome bit."

Ye Qingwu had found out about this from a friend. Apparently Sun Ling's older sisters were of some standing within the entertainment industry, and were not to be trifled with.

So she was worried and decided to quickly tell Jiang Ning so that they could be prepared for it.

"Powerful families from the north?" Jiang Ning ended up laughing instead. "Then there's nothing to worry about."

Ye Qingwu was shocked.

She knew Jiang Ning was formidable, but those were powerful families in the north she was talking about. Even though a family like the Su family was powerful in Shenghai, they too, took great efforts to be connected to a powerful family in the north.

The Sun family wasn't really relying on these families, but if trouble started, then the two daughters wouldn't let this matter go either.

Jiang Ning wasn't bothered at all?

"Ok, as long as you know what you're doing. Just don't let Yuzhen get hurt," said Ye Qingwu seriously.

"Don't worry," Jiang Ning nodded. He knew Ye Qingwu was just concerned over Lin Yuzhen. "Go back and rest. You must be tired out after a whole day of filming."

Ye Qingwu nodded and left the room.

Jiang Ning remained seated on the sofa and clearly wasn't bothered by anything she said.

Powerful families of the north?

They were like a joke to Jiang Ning. Why would he care?

They were the ones that he was going to clean up in the future!

Every single one of them!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What did Qingwu say?" Lin Yuzhen walked in while yawning. "She seemed very worried."

Jiang Ning laughed. "Nothing to worry about. Go and sleep if you're tired."

After telling Lin Yuzhen not to worry, she really didn't worry anymore.

He really loved this heartless girl.

She never asked further questions, never seemed to feel conflicted, and always listened to whatever he said. She was so obedient.

"Ok," Lin Yuzhen nodded obediently, got changed and tucked herself into bed.

After a while, she stretched a hand out from under the blanket and mumbled, "Hubby, the bed is warm and ready."

Jiang Ning didn't know what to do.

This girl really knew how to get to him!

He dashed over immediately only to hear Lin Yuzhen's even breathing. She was already asleep.

"Wifey, you're tempting me to sin again and again."

Jiang Ning didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He didn't dare to move around too much in case he woke Lin Yuzhen up, so he had to carefully pick up one corner of the blanket, tuck himself in and didn't move after that.

.....

Meanwhile.

Sun Ling had just gotten his finger treated. His face looked particularly nasty, as if he had just eaten a dead rat.

Someone in the restaurant actually said that he was a son being taught a lesson by his father and that was why he ended up kneeling on the floor. That made him so angry that his intestines nearly knotted up.

"I thought he was some big shot. So he's just a man who married into his wife's family!" Sun Ling laughed coldly. He spat out mockingly, "What an embarrassing piece of crap!"

Guo Sange sat there with a bandage around his leg. One had a broken finger and the other had a broken leg. What a coincidence.

"Young Master Sun, this guy can fight, and he's pretty brutal!" said Guo Sange. "Do you want me to find someone to kill him?"

Sun Ling's eyes became cold.

"Jianzhou is not very peaceful recently, so don't do anything rash."

Yang Xiao and the Yang family had been wiped out in one night, and the five tigers of Jianzhou had died terribly within their own estate. That really shook up Jianzhou.

There were people who said that Yang Xiao had offended a big shot in Tianhai's illegal circle, and that was how she met her end.

But Sun Ling knew that Yang Xiao was backed by someone in the north. Her backer wasn't strong, but they were still connected. So even if Tianhai's illegal circle wanted to make their move, then surely they would consider the northern backer even if they didn't care for the Yang family, right?

He knew a thing or two from his older sisters about the powerful families of the north, so he was even more wary and in reverence of them.

He was very confident that things weren't as simple as they seemed!

The illegal circle of Tianhai was just a cover. The real mastermind was definitely from the north.

"Then we're just going to let them get away like that?" Guo Sange couldn't take this lying down. "I really want to kill them!"

"When it comes to dealing with people, relying on your fists alone isn't enough," laughed Sun Ling coldly. "If you want to kill someone, you have to put in some thought too!"

Guo Sange's eyes lit up.

"Lin Group wants to enter the southeast market and has put in a lot of money and manpower," Sun Ling suddenly laughed maliciously. "How do you think they would feel if they ended up failing and had no choice but to get out of this region with their tails between their legs?"

"They would be angry! In despair!" replied Guo Sange immediately.

"That's right!" Sun Ling laughed loudly. "I want them to be angry! To be in despair! I want them to suffer great loss!"

"Trying to fight me? You guys are nothing!"

"Without the backing of the Yang family, they have no right to enter this region."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Sun Ling still thought that Lin Group was entering the southeast market because they were backed by the Yang family. But it was too bad now that Yang Luolin had died early and the Yang family had been wiped out.

He had no idea that if he hadn't gone upstairs with some woman that night, he wouldn't have offended someone that he could never afford to offend!

Sun Ling came up with a plan and called Guo Sange over. Guo Sange hopped over on one leg and listened to what Sun Ling whispered into his ear.

"Got it? We'll attack from both sides and make sure Lin Group's product launch turns into a joke!"

"Got it!" Guo Sange clapped his hands and there was a glint in his eye. "Young Master Sun, don't worry. I'm going to break that fellow's legs and make sure he kneels in front of you and admits his mistake!"

He then hobbled away on a walking stick, and Sun Ling got to work too.

He made a call and someone came walking into the office.

"CEO Sun."

"Our product launch is to be held on the same day, same time and same location as Lin Group!" Sun Ling continued in a sinister voice, "Send out invitations to all the media outlets and allow them to watch the product ads of both sides clearly."

If one didn't have enough confidence to compete this way, then one might end up humiliating himself.

If his promotional ad wasn't as good as the other party's and lost out from the very beginning, then it would cause a domino effect and he would always be behind his opponent.

Being one step behind would eventually become several steps behind, and this was a big no no in the marketing industry.

"Young Master Sun..." the subordinate wanted to advise him against it, but since Sun Ling seemed so confident, he could only nod his head. "I'll see to it immediately."

Sun Ling felt like he could already imagine how Lin Group was going to embarrass themselves at their product launch and how their image in the industry was going to be shattered.

Whereas his product would be launched successfully and take the region by

storm!

He would achieve the target of 50% market share and complete the test his family gave him.

He was going to destroy the plans Lin Group had for the southeast, he wanted to ruin Lin Yuzhen's reputation and he wanted Jiang Ning to kneel down and apologize to him!

At the same time.

Lin Group was doing the post production process for the ads.

Huang Fang had treated everyone to a good meal and all of them were very motivated. They all wanted to work hard and do a good job so that they wouldn't disappoint Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen.

"Yes, that's the effect I want. Keep the style the same, it's very important."

Huang Fang was very confident when it came to something he was good at, and quickly settled the details.

RIIIING...

His phone suddenly started ringing. It was a number he didn't recognize.

Huang Fang frowned and wanted to ignore the call, but the phone kept ringing.

He waved his hand to tell the rest to continued working while he walked to the stairs to take the call.

"Hello, who's on the line?"

"You're Mr Huang, right?" A very friendly voice came through the phone. "I'm calling from Sun Group's Beauty Company, and I want to discuss a deal with you."

Huang Fang wanted to hang up the moment he heard this person was from Sun Group.

"Mr Huang, don't be too anxious to hang up. Why not hear me out first? If you don't think it's worth your time, then you can still hang up after that."

Huang Fang asked, "What do you want? What deal?"

"A deal that's worth \$20 million."

The other side laughed gleefully and became even more confident when he heard Huang Fang take a deep breath. "It's a deal that you'd definitely earn and not lose anything!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Huang Fang didn't change his tone of voice. "What do you mean?"

"Of course we're giving you money! As long as you're willing to help, then I'll send you a check for \$20 million immediately!"

The other side was getting more and more confident because he could tell that Huang Fang had started to waver.

How many centuries would he have to work in order to earn \$20 million?

Even a company director would waver if they heard this. Besides, it only required Huang Fang to do something very simple, and it didn't involve much.

There was only profit and no loss!

After listening to the other party, Huang Fang frowned slightly. "That's it?"

"Don't you think it's a good deal? Hohoho, don't worry, I'll send the check to you in a few moments. At the same time, I hope you'll consider working for me."

"I guarantee that you'd get more benefits than working for Lin Group!"

Then the other side hung up.

Huang Fang took a deep breath and his face was a little red.

\$20 million!

The other party was really generous. This thing he had to do was really very simple, and he would get \$20 million.

He had even offered him an escape route to join Sun Group!

Ten minutes later, someone sent a parcel to Huang Fang. His hands trembled as he tore the box open and found a cash check for \$20 million.

The other side gave him money before he had even done anything?

Wasn't he afraid that Huang Fang would just take the money and run?

Huang Fang calmed himself down and didn't say anything. He kept the check away and returned to his office.

Meanwhile.

Sun Ling had just put down the phone and he was quite sure his plan was working.

Nobody would reject \$20 million. This was money that most people would never be able to earn in their lifetime. Besides, it was such easy money that carried no risk and no pressure since the task was so simple.

If Huang Fang didn't want this money, then he must be stupid!

"Lin Yuzhen, you can watch with your own eyes as Lin Group embarrasses themselves in front of all the media outlets!"

Sun Ling laughed loudly with a gleeful face. He could already imagine how Lin Yuzhen and Lin Group would make things so awkward on the day of the product launch.

Lin Group's new product probably wouldn't even get the chance to be launched and would be cut off immediately!

He couldn't wait.

The two companies were now going to hold their product launch on the same day, same time and same location. Sun Ling purposely chose the hall right across from Lin Group, so they were no more than 90 feet apart. They were practically doing this face to face!

As long as Sun Ling managed to thumb Lin Group down on the promotional ads, then Lin Group could forget about lifting their heads high in this region.

Sun Ling had gotten everything ready and he had even prepared the celebratory dinner in advance.

Lin Group's product would fail miserably and he would take this chance to use his product to gain more market share!

He could pass his family's test and step down hard on Lin Group at the same time, and he could even chase Lin Group out of the region forever.

He was killing two birds with one stone!

Meanwhile.

Jiang Ning was in the hotel room.

He was sitting on the sofa and having tea. He was both relaxed and enjoying himself.

For others, they were on a work trip. But for him, he was on holiday.

Lin Yuzhen was seated at a desk and settling some company matters, so Jiang

Ning didn't disturb her.

DOONG DOONG DOONG.

Someone knocked the door. Jiang Ning responded and Huang Fang walked in.

"Brother Ning, we've completed the post production on the ad. Do you want to check it first?"

He bowed slightly and looked at the floor.

"No need, I trust you."

"Ok," Huang Fang nodded. "Then we'll use this version for this afternoon's product launch."

Jiang Ning nodded and didn't say anything.

Huang Fang turned and left the room.

After he walked out, he quickly walked to the stairs and someone was already waiting for him there.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Huang Fang looked around him carefully to make sure nobody followed him. Then he pulled out a memory card from his pocket and passed it to the man at the stairs.

"Here's the memory card from your camera. I've already made edits and it's even better than Lin Group's!"

"Then what about Lin Group's ad?"

"I've done it according to what CEO Sun wanted."

"Excellent, Mr Huang. I thank you on behalf of CEO Sun."

That man then stuffed the memory card into his pocket, put his cap on and left.

Huang Fang exhaled deeply when he saw that the man had gone.

He wiped away the sweat on his forehead and felt like his legs were still trembling.

He was so nervous!

DOONG DOONG DOONG.

Someone was knocking Jiang Ning's door again.

This time, Huang Fang just went right in without waiting for Jiang Ning's response and quickly closed the door behind him.

"Brother Ning, I was so nervous!"

"What are you nervous about?" Jiang Ning poured him a cup of tea. "Come and have some tea, don't be nervous anymore."

Huang Fang quickly sat down, picked up the tea and gulped it all down.

"They took it away?"

"Yes."

Huang Fang took a deep breath. "They'd definitely test it out, but there won't be any problems since the front bit is normal. Once we start the actual program, I'll undo the encryption and the real version will appear."

He was still a little nervous.

Huang Fang had been anxious since he received that call.

He never thought of taking that \$20 million at all.

Were you crazy?

This was Lin Group we were talking about!

He had put in so much effort to get into Lin Group, and there was no way he was leaving this company.

There was no way the Lin family and Jiang Ning's trust and respect for him was only worth \$20 million!

Besides, Jiang Ning was the most generous when it came to money!

So he quickly reported this matter to Jiang Ning secretly. To his surprise, Jiang Ning actually told him to cooperate with the other party and do what they told him to, but with a few extra tweaks.

Huang Fang's legs were still trembling when he thought about that ad he did for them.

"Brother Ning, that \$20 million..."

"Hold onto it," Jiang Ning didn't even lift his eyes. "Someone wanted to give this money away, so why not take it? Treat it as a reward for this project, and you can split it among your team mates accordingly."

"Thank you Brother Ning!" Huang Fang was so excited now.

\$20 million was a lot of money!

He had just received more than \$1 million as a reward for the last round, and now he had received another \$20 million. He was really headed for the top of the world now.

"He invited you to join their company. Are you going?"

"Over my dead body!" Huang Fang immediately shook his head vigorously. "Brother Ning, there's no way you're getting rid of me!"

Jiang Ning was so amused.

When he saw how Huang Fang had insisted on protecting the company's equipment even if he might get beaten to death, he was sure that it was worth keeping Huang Fang in the company.

Sun Ling had no idea how united in spirit and how proud of working for Lin

Group the workers were at all.

Betraying Lin Group was as good as betraying their family!

"Alright now, focus on acting realistically, and I'll think about making you the lead in our next ad."

Huang Fang became even more excited and kept nodding. "Don't worry, Brother Ning. I took acting classes in university too, I've just been waiting for a chance."

He then quickly left the room because he had to put on a good act.

Jiang Ning sipped his tea and there was a mischievous smile on his face.

"This Sun Ling must be looking forward to the product launch, right?"

"I'm looking forward to it even more than him!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

At the product launch!

The time had come.

The product launch that everyone was looking forward to was already making waves online even before it began.

The voting competition Lin Group organized made many fans of various celebrities quarrel online and argue offline.

Everybody insisted that their favorite star was the one with the best poise and was most suitable to be the spokesperson for this equally classy product.

There was absolutely no leak about who the spokesperson really was, and everything was still kept under wraps.

At the event hall.

It was filled with people.

The massive crowd moved like the tide.

"Why are there so many people?" Lin Yuzhen looked down from upstairs with a look of disbelief. "You mean our product is so influential even before it has been released?"

"You're thinking too much," Jiang Ning laughed. "They're here to see their favorite stars and the hope to win the prize money."

He looked over at the next hall also having a product launch. Sun Ling had arranged it like that.

One of the reasons why there were so many people was that Sun Ling had invited them here, so that it became more crowded.

The crowd made him seem more powerful, but he also wanted more people to watch Lin Group embarrass themselves.

He was really a disgusting fellow.

"Qingwu, you just need to appear for a while later," Jiang Ning turned to Ye Qingwu. "I'll arrange for men to protect you, don't worry."

"Ok," Ye Qingwu nodded. She just needed to go along with Jiang Ning's arrangements.

Since both companies were doing their product launch at the same time, many

reporters would take photos on one side, then quickly run to the other side to take photos.

It was obvious that the two companies intended to compete with one another.

This promotional ad reveal was already so tense!

Ye Qingwu glanced at Jiang Ning to find that he still looked very calm and confident. She was still a little worried, but she had already said everything she could, and Jiang Ning knew what to do.

It wasn't appropriate for her to say anymore.

"I hope we can get off to a good start!" Lin Yuzhen said excitedly while clenching her fists.

This was the best chance for Lin Group to enter the southeast market. The moment this one went well, then it would be easier in the future.

Once the path into the southeast was clear, that would prove that the direction Lin Group chose to expand into was not a problem.

This was a good chance to boost the company's morale!

"Let's go, it's time to watch a good show," Jiang Ning said as he led them downstairs.

At the same time.

Sun Ling was on the other side looking down at the two halls.

"CEO Sun, we've invited a lot of people and almost everyone in the media is here. We've also instructed them to write their articles as truthfully as possible and release them immediately after the launch."

"Good."

Sun Ling nodded satisfactorily.

He had reviewed the ad that Huang Fang passed to him and he was very satisfied with it.

His post production skills were much more detailed than Guo Sange. It was practically perfect.

He even thought that he might not even need to do anything extra and Lin Group would still lose.

But he was still worried, so he made Huang Fang prepare another ad. That way, Lin Group wouldn't just lose, but they would also embarrass themselves greatly in front of all these people!

"Come along, let's go watch the show!" Sun Ling laughed loudly and went downstairs.

He really couldn't wait.

The atmosphere downstairs was so heated, the security guards had trouble holding the crowd back.

"Everyone, please stand back, stop pushing!"

"Please watch from here!"

"The celebrities will come out in a while, please be patient!"

The security guards continued to shout and they had helpless expressions on their face.

"It's got to be our goddess, Tian Mimi! Her poise is just like the ad copy!"

"Tsk, how could it be? It's definitely Yang Chen! She always acts as a fairy!"

"Stop making wild guesses, I've got insider information that it's a singer!"

A huge group of people started arguing.

The lights came on and everyone quietened down.

Lin Yuzhen walked out from the backstage and walked to the podium. The entire crowd was in a daze.

"Who is she? Is she a celebrity?"

"But I've never seen her before. She's so elegant, but I don't know who she is."

Many of them were confused. They didn't know who the beautiful lady on stage was, and they didn't remember this face among the current popular artistes either.

"Hello everyone, I'm the CEO of Lin Group, Lin Yuzhen," Lin Yuzhen introduced herself with a smile. "I'm not the star of the ad, but we'll reveal who she is in no time."

Everyone was even more shocked by this. They didn't expect the CEO of Lin

Group to be so poised.

Was it because she used her own company's products?

The product launch on the other side started too!

Sun Ling walked up to his podium and there was a bright smile on his face, but his eyes were staring straight at Lin Yuzhen on the other side.

"What a coincidence. I didn't expect to have a product launch on the same day as Lin Group," he quickly waved his hands. "CEO Lin and I didn't arrange this beforehand, don't make any guesses."

"Lin Group is a famous company in Tianhai, so my humble company cannot be compared to them." He purposely sighed and continued in a very helpless voice, "I actually wanted to change the date of my launch, because doing this on the same day as Lin Group makes me very anxious and very nervous!"

The expression on Sun Ling's face was clearly meant to butter Lin Group up and kept putting them on a pedestal.

That was because he knew very well that the higher they rose, the harder they would fall!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"But since we're launching on the same day, then it would be a good chance to see how far we are from Lin Group."

"In that way, we could also reflect on ourselves and look at where we can make improvements, don't you think so?" said Sun Ling humbly.

There was applause and cheering.

He looked up and saw that Lin Yuzhen had gotten her staff to prepare to screen her ad, so he quickly raised a hand to keep everyone quiet.

"Everyone, let's remain quiet for a while. It's a rare chance to learn from them, so we should seize this opportunity!"

The directors standing behind Sun Ling all stood up to express their respect towards Lin Group.

Everyone's eyes were now on Lin Yuzhen.

"Hello everyone, we will now play our promotional ad for everyone."

Lin Yuzhen kept a smile on. She was quite nervous since everyone was watching her, but after she looked at Jiang Ning who was looking back at her quietly, she didn't feel scared anymore.

When Lin Yuzhen nodded, Huang Fang got to work.

The moment the clip started, the screen went blank.

After a while, there was still no response from the laptop. Lin Yuzhen looked at Huang Fang, but Huang Fang only looked anxious and helpless as he didn't seem to know what to do.

There was a problem.

There was a problem with their ad?

"What's going on?"

"Why aren't they screening anything? Is a blank screen their ad?"

"Are they playing around with us?"

Some of the people started getting upset.

It was such an important event and Lin Group couldn't even get their video to work? That had to be a joke.

Soon enough, the murmurs grew louder and louder, and the place became very noisy.

Sun Ling stood at the stage across the hall and started laughing. He hadn't spent that \$20 million for nothing!

Lin Group couldn't screen their ad at all, because Sun Ling had told Huang Fang to delete it!

"What's going on?" Sun Ling pretended to look surprised. "Why is there a problem with Lin Group's ad? It's such a large company, so this shouldn't happen."

"If you can't screen it, then how are we supposed to learn?" He sighed and shook his head. Then he suggested, "Why not we watch mine first?"

Once his ad was screened, then the difference would be obvious!

Lin Group would be an embarrassment to the entire region!

"Ok! Let's watch CEO Sun's first!"

"I think that Lin Group doesn't have any ad at all, and never hired any celebrity! They were just lying to us!"

"That's cheating! That's cheating the consumers!"

"Let's watch Sun Group's!"

Suddenly, everyone's attention was focused on Sun Ling's side.

All the cameras also turned and focused on the large screen behind Sun Ling.

Some of them were even broadcasting live online. Sun Ling had gotten the chance to screen his ad first, so now things were different.

Sun Ling said that he wanted Lin Group to screen theirs first so that he could learn from them.

That was giving others a chance. Such a humble attitude was really admirable!

Lin Yuzhen was getting anxious.

She saw how there was a problem on her side and now everyone's attention was on Sun Ling's side. She didn't understand why there was a problem. Her team had checked all these things so many times.

"Huang Fang, what happened?" she quickly asked him.

"I'm thinking, I'm thinking!" Huang Fang replied anxiously. "CEO Lin, don't worry, I'll settle it!"

He immediately pulled his own laptop out and started up the program.

Sun Ling had gotten his staff to start screening the ad.

The first shot alone made everyone gasp. The camera angle and the scenery was amazing, and it captured everyone's attention almost instantly.

Sun Ling was very satisfied with everyone's reaction. He glanced smugly at the screen, then turned back to look at Lin Yuzhen and her team.

He even spread his arms out slightly to show his sympathies.

He felt even better when he saw how anxious Lin Yuzhen looked.

Lin Group failed right from the beginning! That was the headlines for tomorrow!

"This camera angle is great and it's been really well done. The models and the products are really perfectly placed together! It's amazing!"

"The post production team has really put in a lot of effort into this. CEO Sun has really put in a lot of thought and even just an ad has been put together so beautifully. Thumbs up for CEO Sun!"

"The product and the catchphrase is going to come out soon."

Everyone nodded and kept praising the video.

Sun Ling glanced at some of the reporters and they quickly made sure that their cameras broadcast the ad live online.

On the other side, Lin Group wasn't even able to play their ad. What sort of launch event was this?

Lin Yuzhen was really in a panic.

If this went on, then everything would be over once Sun Ling finished screening his ad. Everyone would leave and Lin Group would have failed.

She looked at Jiang Ning, but he continued sitting there as if nothing bothered him. He didn't seem the slightest bit worried.

Huang Fang's fingers flew all over the keyboard, then he looked at Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning nodded.

He received the go ahead from Jiang Ning!

"The exciting part is here!"

Huang Fang chuckled. He smashed the enter key and suddenly...

The screen across the hall suddenly changed scene and there were people speaking, but...

"Ahhh...ah..."

"Unghh...ohhh..."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls...

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

All the women in the crowd immediately blushed and quickly covered their eyes as they started screaming that Sun Ling was really vulgar!

All the men were caught by surprise, then their Adam's apples started moving up and down. They couldn't believe that Sun Ling's promotional ad was so tantalizing!

Even Sun Ling himself stood rooted to the floor as if he had been struck by lightning.

What the hell was this?!

The images on the screen were downright obscene and shameless, and the movement on screen really deserved to be censored.

Nobody cared what one watched in private. But this was a public place!

There were so many reporters, audience and even cameras broadcasting live!

There were so many people having a nosebleed in front of their computer screens as they watched the live broadcast.

They even cheered and thought that Sun Ling was incredible for making such a titillating promotional ad.

"AHH!" Even Lin Yuzhen only took one glance when she heard those noises and quickly turned away. Her face was all red.

Sun Ling was too shameless!

How could he broadcast something like that in public? This was broadcasting indecent content in public and it was considered illegal.

"Turn it off! Turn it off NOW!!"

Sun Ling's face was all red from fury. He never expected the promotional ad to turn out like this. And worse still, his own product was placed next to the face of the woman enjoying herself in that video.

What a shocker!

It was as if the ad was trying to say Sun Ling's product was made for one to engage in such activity.

It was vulgar.

Shameless.

And it really wasn't for public viewing.

"Turn it off! This is just an accident, everyone, please calm down! This is just an accident!"

Sun Ling really wanted to kill someone. How did this even happen? He checked it before playing it and there was no problem.

Huang Fang was still working on his laptop and nearly shouted in excitement. His fingers flew over the keyboard and the screen on Sun Ling's side refused to turn off, plus the volume became even louder now!

"Now you're famous eh? Happy now?"

"This is part of my most precious collection!"

Huang Fang looked up and hoped to get affirmation from Jiang Ning. Jiang Ning was stunned for a few moments. He had really been startled by this.

This Huang Fang was just as ridiculous as Brother Gou.

But, it was still a job well done!

Jiang Ning chuckled.

When Sun Ling realized the screen couldn't be turned off, he got someone to quickly cut the main power source. But the whole place was already in chaos.

All the women were calling Sun Ling a douchebag and a pervert who was insulting them!

"Report him! We have to report him!"

"You actually dare to announce and release such a vulgar and low class product?!"

"This company is really obscene! So disgusting! I'm never buying anything from this company!"

"Boycott them! Report them!"

Sun Ling was going to start cursing and swearing but he didn't know who on earth he should direct his anger at. Everything was going as planned, so how did things turn out this way?

He suddenly thought of something and looked at Huang Fang across the hall.

"You! You little bastard! How dare you play me out!"

Sun Ling hit the roof. He finally realized that Huang Fang must have been the one who fiddled with the video.

This wasn't a promotion at all. This was ruining his own reputation!

He was doomed now. Never mind his original plan of trampling on Lin Group – he could forget about getting 50% of the market share and forget about passing his family's test. In fact, he might even lose the 40% market share he already owned.

He was doomed!

"You're asking for it!" Sun Ling was really furious. He called a few of his men over and rushed over to the other side.

"Huang Fang! How dare you play me out!" He pointed furiously at Huang Fang. "I'm going to kill you! Beat him up!"

His men immediately rushed over.

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

A few muffled sounds were followed by howls of pain. The crowd quickly parted to reveal Sun Ling's men all curled up on the floor like a bunch of large prawns.

Sun Ling's expression changed and his teeth were chattering from anger.

"Beat him up?" Jiang Ning stood in front of Huang Fang and looked at Sun Ling. "You wanna try?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning stood there like a god.

He was authoritative!

Domineering!

Sun Ling suddenly didn't dare to move forward.

His finger had just been broken by Jiang Ning, so he knew how aggressively and swiftly he took action. There was no way he was going to offend Jiang Ning again.

"You..." Sun Ling clenched his teeth. "I'll remember this!"

"Let's go!"

He then walked away with his men.

The crowd parted to let them go. They didn't dare to offend Sun Ling since he was so angry now, but the finger pointing and sarcastic remarks never stopped.

"So shameless, tsak!"

"Can't believe how shameless that was! They actually broadcast such a thing in public! So vulgar!"

"I've already reported them! We've got to clean up this society and get these disgusting people out of Jianzhou!"

Sun Ling's expression darkened when he heard these comments but he didn't say anything and just got into his car and left.

He knew that his event was ruined and it had ended so badly, it was so embarrassing!

It didn't just affect his new product. His reputation was ruined too!

Once that affected the market share his company had, he was in deep trouble.

Sun Ling didn't say anything. Once he got into the car, he said in a seething voice, "Go home! Lin Group...I'll make you pay for this!"

In the meantime,

The event hall was still chaotic.

Sun Ling's side was a complete mess and there was nobody left watching their side.

On Lin Group's side, Lin Yuzhen raised her hands to quieten the crowd down.

"Everyone! Everyone!" She used a hand to hit the microphone a few times and spoke loudly, "Please quieten down!"

Everyone slowly quietened down.

"I'm really sorry, we ran into a few technical difficulties earlier, but everything has been resolved." She looked at Huang Fang and Huang Fang nodded back at her. So she continued, "And now, I would like to invite everyone to watch our promotional ad. We hope that you can provide us with valuable feedback and suggestions, and any one we pick will receive a prize too!"

The screen instantly lit up.

Everyone was now glued to the screen and didn't say a word.

The camera slowly zoomed in on the horizon that separated the sky from the sea, and everyone felt like they were falling into the scene.

A beautiful figure then appeared in the shot. It was just the back view, but everyone's eyes lit up – this person had such an amazing figure!

Many men felt their hearts pound by just looking at this back view, as if they had seen the woman of their dreams.

"Who is it?"

Everyone was asking this question and waiting for the answer.

The answer was soon revealed.

Ye Qingwu turned around to reveal her mesmerizing face. She had a faint smile on and her perfect skin was fair and flawless. She made every woman jealous and made every man drool.

The camera used the golden ratio to put everything in one screen beautifully. One section was Ye Qingwu's profile, another section was the product's profile, then the catchphrase appeared: You can be this beautiful too!

The charisma of both Ye Qingwu and the product were instantly merged as one!

Perfect!

It was simply perfect!

After the ad finished playing, the people in the hall were silent for a few moments, then there was thunderous applause.

"You can be this beautiful too! I'm remembering that!"

"I remembered that at first glance, but I will never forget Ye Qingwu's face! Her skin is amazing!"

"Can we really get that effect if we use this product?"

Even if they couldn't, this thought was already planted in their head.

After looking at the reaction from the crowd, Lin Yuzhen knew that this ad had really reached their target audience and they were a big hit!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"It's Ye Qingwu! It's Ye Qingwu!"

"I told you it was my goddess, Ye Qingwu! Her songs are always so classy, and she's definitely the most suitable!"

"Our goddess is here today, right?"

Everyone in the hall became very excited.

Those crazy fans wished they could rush backstage to see if Ye Qingwu was around or not.

"Everyone, don't worry! Miss Ye Qingwu is indeed here with us!" Lin Yuzhen said with a big smile. "Let's invite Miss Ye Qingwu on stage now!"

There was thunderous applause as all the cameras focused on the stage.

Ye Qingwu walked out from backstage with Lin Group's new product in hand. She wore a white long dress and looked fresh and lively. She was like a beautiful fairy and nobody could take their eyes off her.

"You can be this beautiful too," she said the catchphrase with a smile, leaving an even deeper impression on the people.

"Hello everyone!"

Ye Qingwu waved and greeted everyone.

All the fans went wild!

"AAAH!!! IT'S YE QINGWU! IT'S YE QINGWU!!!"

Ye Qingwu was already used to this sort of thing. Waving her hands and smiling gently was all part of her job.

She purposely looked at Jiang Ning because she wanted him to see how much influence she had over other people, but he just continued sitting where he was calmly. He didn't even look at her, and kept his eye on Lin Yuzhen.

"How crazy in love with Lin Yuzhen is this guy?" Ye Qingwu was suddenly curious.

After that, they went into some interactive activities to further impress the image of the product on the people.

With Ye Qingwu's help, the results were excellent.

There were dozens of cameras snapping away and the live broadcasts were exploding.

Now Ye Qingwu's name was tied to Lin Group's new product. Any mention of Ye Qingwu would be followed by a comment about her being the spokesperson for Lin Group's new product.

Any mention of the new product would be followed by a comment about how Ye Qingwu was its spokesperson.

It was a success!

In fact, it was extremely successful!

After the event, everyone went back to the hotel together.

It had been a tiring day, but everyone was still so excited.

"It's a success! It's a success! The effect was amazing!"

Huang Fang's face was all red with excitement. "Brother Ning, did you see the posts online? It's exploded! That bastard's famous!"

"What posts?"

"He's made the headlines!" Huang Fang immediately showed Jiang Ning. "Look at these two threads. One is about Lin Group, and the other is about that asshole. HAHA I'm dying from laughter!"

Jiang Ning took the phone from Huang Fang.

The thread about Lin Group was filled with posts introducing the new product and giving rave reviews about the product launch as well as the ad.

The one about Sun Ling was filled with posts that said he was someone with no limits or morals and actually dared to use such obscene material for their ads.

This hadn't just challenged the moral limits of the people, but it was also a pollution of the society and most importantly, this was against the law!

The posts suggested that everyone who was present at the event should report them and not allow such a company to continue existing!

What an aggressive move!

He really put in a lot of thought to kill off the other party!

Jiang Ning couldn't help but give Huang Fang a thumbs up.

"You've got a bright future ahead, I'm looking forward to how you perform."

"Thank you Brother Ning!" Huang Fang clasped his hands together and declared loudly, "I will not disappoint the trust you have in me and the efforts you have put into grooming me. I hereby solemnly swear to put in my best effort for Lin Group's expansion even if it may cost my life!"

This guy was getting a bit too dramatic.


Jiang Ning couldn't be bothered with him. He waved him off to arrange the celebratory dinner.

Meanwhile,

Sun Ling had also seen the headlines. He grabbed his laptop and smashed it on the floor

"Jiang Ning, I want all of you dead!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Sun Ling had lost!

He had lost so badly!

He had embarrassed himself in front of so many people, and he was even the one who had invited so many media outlets over. In the end?

They were the ones who were writing all these awful things about him!

This was like smashing his own foot with a rock.

And because of how terrible his side was, Lin Group ended up looking much better than him. They had gotten a huge celebrity like Ye Qingwu, and their success was now built on his failure.

How could Sun Ling not be angry?

"CEO Sun..."

His secretary crept in cautiously and didn't dare to speak when she saw how nasty Sun Ling looked.

"Just spit it out!" Sun Ling spat out coldly.

"Our new product... has to be stopped. There are boycotts being organized online and it has already affected our retailers. They want to cut their contracts with us."

Sun Ling's face paled.

They wanted to cut the contract?

So before his new product could hit the shelves, he had to stop production!

He clenched his fist and his expression darkened. His entire body trembled in fury.

"Then stop the production!"

He could afford this loss!

"Also..."

ALSO?

Sun Lin raised an eyebrow. What the hell? There was some more bad news?

"Some of our bestsellers have been taken off the shelves. The retailers say that they haven't seen any sales and they've made a considerable loss, so we might have to stop producing those too."

Sun Ling felt like his heart was bleeding.

This loss was too great.

He was going to lose the market share that he fought so hard to attain!

He took a deep breath and stared straight at his secretary and even his eyelids were twitching. "What else? If there's anything else, say it now!"

"Also..."

Sun Ling almost fell off his chair. There was really more!

"The relevant department is here to investigate. They said that our ad is against the broadcasting act, so they will need to investigate and mete out punishment accordingly."

The secretary's voice was now as soft as a mosquito and she didn't even dare to look up.

She was afraid of seeing Sun Ling's murderous eyes.

But Sun Ling didn't react. He just sat where he was and finally waved a hand to dismiss the secretary after a long while.

He sat there without moving for a long time. He was like a statue staring at the tea cup in front of him, as if his soul had left him.

After a while, Sun Ling let out a cold snort.

"Since you've ruined my plans, I'm going to kill you!"

He made a call and Guo Sange came hobbling in on a walking stick.

He knew all about what happened at the event. He thought that Lin Group would be the one who would be thoroughly embarrassed and even chased out of the southeast, but in the end the embarrassed one was Sun Ling, and he had to pay a hefty price for it.

So they couldn't end this matter kindly anymore.

"Young Master Sun!" Guo Sange coldly said, "Tell me what I must do!"

"I've thought about it. Lin Group is trying to use their new product to enter this market, so this new product is the most important thing to them."

Sun Ling wasn't in a daze earlier. He was thinking of how to deal with Lin Group.

Since he couldn't push Lin Group into a corner openly, then he had plenty of underhanded means to do so.

"The new product will hit the shelves in two days, so when that happens..." He laughed coldly. "You shall do what I instruct you to!"

"As for their spokesperson, Ye Qingwu, I'll deal with her too. I'll arrange that on my side."

"Yes, Young Master Sun!"

Guo Sange knew that Sun Ling had a scheme up his sleeve. He loved this part about working for Sun Ling.

"What about Jiang Ning?" Guo Sange suddenly asked. "I want to kill that fellow!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Don't worry, I'll let you have this fellow once I get Lin Group out of this region," Sun Ling smiled with a tinge of malice on his face.

Guo Sange left and Sun Ling's phone rang. He couldn't help but frown when he saw who was calling – it was a call from home. Things had clearly gotten serious enough for his family to know about what happened.

Lin Group had gotten him into hot soup!

He was going to make them pay double!

It was only a matter of time before the beauty company in Sun Ling's hands closed down. The market share he owned was going down steadily and it wouldn't be long before it became zero.

On the other hand, Lin Group's new product had been the top news online within the southeast for several days in a row.

Various major retailers contacted Lin Group in hope of being able to carry their product.

Lin Yuzhen already got the factory under Chen Yu to quickly ramp up production, because the orders were going way past their production ability.

She had very strict requirements and insisted on maintaining quality. She would rather stop taking orders than to compromise on quality.

If she couldn't guarantee the quality of the product, then that would turn into a landmine waiting to explode!

"CEO Lin! The total sales orders add up to more than \$200 million!" Xiaozhao's voice was trembling slightly. "It's only been a week!"

"The factory can't fulfil so many orders, so stop taking in orders and ensure the quality."

Lin Yuzhen had just called Chen Yu to talk about adding more production lines. But it would need another week or so to install everything.

She didn't expect the new product to be so popular.

Ye Qingwu's influence was really scary!

She was very sure that once the new product hit the shelves, it would cause a frenzy. The plan to enter the southeast would also be successful.

"Contact HQ, ask them for more people to prepare new promotional activities.

"We're going to strike while the iron is hot!"

Everyone got busy.

Jiang Ning just sat on the sofa and drank his tea leisurely. He really enjoyed this feeling.

He loved to watch Lin Yuzhen work seriously. The more he watched her, the more he liked watching her work, and the more adorable he found her.

"Big Boss, that Sun Ling isn't going to just take this lying down. That boy's reputation is quite poor and he's pulled a lot of dirty tricks on others."

Huang Yuming was here. He was here to say that he could handle this directly and Jiang Ning didn't need to settle Sun Ling.

Right now in Jianzhou, as long as Huang Yuming said the word, the Sun family was doomed!

"No worries, this Sun family has some connections with the north. If we can agitate the north, then we should. Otherwise it'll be so meaningless," replied Jiang Ning calmly. "I love dirty tricks."

Meanwhile,

At the Sun house,

Sun Ling stood there and was scolded for an entire hour but he dared not say anything at all.

"I wanted you to take a test and you confidently said that there would be no problems. And now?"

"What you've thrown away isn't just the market share or your own reputation. It's also the Sun family's reputation!"

"How could you broadcast that sort of thing in a public space? How would others look at our family? They'll think we're vulgar and shameless!"

Sun Ling clenched his teeth. "That was an accident."

"The Sun family does not allow for such accidents!"

The head of the Sun family, Sun Qi shouted, "I don't want anyone to point fingers at me and say that we're a family that has no moral boundaries or limits when we do things!"

So embarrassing!


So very embarrassing!

The worst part was that a number of media folks was invited there by Sun Ling himself. Was he so bent on ruining the family's reputation in front of other people?

"Dad..."

"Don't talk to me now! I have to reconsider the matter of passing the family to you!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Sun Ling's expression was very nasty.

The position of the head of the family was almost in his hands, and now he didn't know how long he would have to wait.

He had spent so much time and energy and he was nearly there. In the end?

One Jiang Ning had ruined all his plans!

But since Sun Qi was so angry, there was no point in explaining. Any defense from the one who failed would only look like a cover up, and he would only make his father even more disappointed in him.

Then again, the position as the head of the Sun family was his sooner or later.

But Sun Ling was still unhappy because he had received such a painful slap in the face!

Even if his father still gave him the position now, he wouldn't dare to take it. He would be laughed at.

The head of the Sun family broadcast an obscene movie in a public space – that would be a spot on his reputation that he would never be able to get rid of!

"Why are you still standing there? Go and reflect on your actions!" Sun Qi started shouting again when he noticed that Sun Ling was still daydreaming in front of him. "You can't even take this amount of testing, so embarrassing!"

Sun Qi scoffed and left.

Sun Ling didn't say anything. His expression darkened.

He walked back to his room with that dark expression and slammed the door shut behind him.

"Jiang Ning, Lin Yuzhen, I'm going to make you two pay for this!!"

Nobody had ever dared to embarrass him like this. Not even Yang Luolin back then!

"Guo Sange, have you arranged everything?" Sun Ling gave Guo Sange a call. "Remember, blow up the matter as much as you can. I want both Lin Yuzhen and Lin Group's reputation to go down the drain!"

After hanging up, he threw the phone aside and started thinking of what else he could do.

What he wanted wasn't just to destroy this new product. He wanted to trample on Lin Group and he wanted both Lin Yuzhen and Jiang Ning to pay a painful price for doing this to him.

Did they think they could leave Jianzhou in peace after offending him?

Dream on!

At the same time,

Lin Group had reached their busiest and most tense time.

The orders couldn't stop coming in, and both their online and offline sales channels were flooded.

There were even other companies who requested to partner with them to come up with a new product. Many of them came from cities much further out from Jianzhou.

The news really spread too quickly.

Lin Yuzhen was drowning in work.

"That's right, we'll go according to what we've planned. Remember, go according to the procedure and don't be anxious. No matter what happens, quality is the most important thing to us."

Lin Yuzhen had emphasized this many times.

She would rather make a loss than to earn money from cheating others.

She turned to look at Jiang Ning enjoying himself. He was the most relaxed out of all of them.

Lin Yuzhen wasn't angry. In fact she was quite proud of herself now.

"Humph! I can earn enough to feed you! I'm not going to let other women snatch you away!"

"Wifey, I've peeled some grapes for you, have some?" Jiang Ning looked up to see Lin Yuzhen looking at him. But the way she looked at him was a little different from usual and he didn't know what on earth this girl was thinking about now.

He picked up the plate and it was full of peeled grapes.

"Hubby, you're so nice to me!"

Lin Yuzhen walked over quickly and her eyes sparkled brightly. Jiang Ning hadn't just enjoyed the grapes by himself. He had actually peeled so many for her.

"Are they sweet?"

"Yeah they are."

"I don't believe you."

"You can have a taste."

"Muuuac..."

"I meant taste the grapes!"

.....

The new product hit the shelves!

Lin Group's new product hit the shelves on time!

The various major retailers had made preparations early to make sure they had enough stock and also enough part timers because they were afraid the crowd might be too much for their regular staff to handle.

But even so, the queues outside the stores shocked some of these merchants anyway.

"There are so many people! That's crazy!"

"The other stores look like this too! It's just a skincare product!"

"Apparently the production can't keep up, so if they don't get it today, they might have to wait quite a while for the next batch. Nobody wants to wait!"

On top of that, Ye Qingwu was the spokesperson, plus the price was reasonable, so most people could afford it, and they could even afford to keep a few bottles at home.

There were also clearly some people who were buying the product in order to resell them at a higher price later.

Did that sort of thing happen to skincare products too?!

"Everyone, calm down, please line up to buy, there's enough for everyo..." The salesperson had to swallow her words when she saw the line outside the store.

There really might not be enough for everyone.

"Move aside, move aside!"

Some men cut the queue and squeezed in front, causing others to be unhappy.

"Why are you cutting the queue!"

"Not happy? I dare you to say another word!"

The expression of the leader of the men darkened immediately. His face had some frightening scars on it, so nobody dared to say anymore.

"Give me ten bottles! Make sure you write me an official receipt, otherwise I don't know if it's genuine goods or not. What if it's fake?"

"Don't worry, these were all purchased through proper channels from Lin Group and they carry Lin Group's seal, so they're all genuine."

"That's the way! I want only genuine goods from Lin Group! Hurry up! Get the stock and write the receipt now!"

It wasn't just in Jianzhou. The product was being sold in the entire southeast region at the same time, and the first day's sales were already beyond Lin Yuzhen's expectations.

The retailers were selling while trying to get more stock because they didn't want to miss this current rush to buy.

Ye Qingwu's ad continued to play everywhere, while the consumers continued to pass the word on about this product, so the demand remained very high.

There were several stores that already ran out of stock and ordered more, but Lin Group really didn't have any for them.

The factory was trying its best to keep up with the demand, but it really couldn't because the product was way too popular!

This was good sign of things to come!

Sun Ling watched expressionlessly as the news continued to report about how well Lin Group's new product was selling. It was like he had no emotions and was just staring into the air.

Suddenly he started laughing. His laughter was sinister, with a hint of madness and he seemed to be laughing at them.

"Lin Yuzhen, Jiang Ning, you guys must be very happy now, right?"

"You must be thinking that your position in this region is stable, right?"

Sun Ling laughed coldly. "If I don't bring you all the way up, then you wouldn't know how painful it is to fall all the way down!"

Lin Group's new product was at the height of its popularity now, so if there were any bad reports on this product, it would spread far and wide instantly.

Sun Ling made a call. His voice was sinister and low. "You can act now!"

After hanging up, he started laughing maniacally like a lunatic.

The next day.

Outside one of the stores.


BAM!


The people were queuing on one side of the store, when someone suddenly kicked open the door on the other side.

The terrible sound made some girls in the queue shriek.

"AHH!!! This store's products have a problem! They have a problem!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Walk! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

A man walked in with his eyes wide and furious as he dragged the woman next to her and shouted, "My wife used their new product last night and this morning her face became like this!"

The woman next to him had a swollen face and there were certain sections that were infected, so it looked really horrifying.

Many people felt very uncomfortable when they saw her face.

That was her face!

Every woman wanted to take good care of their own face. If this happened after just using a skincare product, then that was really terrifying.

"Their product has a problem! Lin Group's new product is really poison!"

"Look at my wife's face! She's disfigured now!"

The man shouted so loudly that many people felt that the bottle in their hands right now was a landmine of sorts.

"I don't want to live anymore! I don't want to live anymore! My face has been disfigured, you have to compensate me! You have to compensate me!!"

The couple quickly started getting into an argument with the staff and they were unable to continue with their business.

There were some among the crowd that suspected it was due to something else, and there were some who were afraid that there was really an issue with the product and everyone started arguing among themselves.

"This despicable store! Give my child's face back to me!" another voice shouted out suddenly.

A middle aged man brought a seventeen or eighteen year old girl into the crowd. He grabbed one of the staff and slapped her across the face.

"Look at what you've done to my child!"

"My daughter said that she wanted the product and it took me half the day to finally buy a bottle, but you actually sold me poison!"

The man shouted as he waved the bottle and its receipt. "Look, I bought this from this particular store and the receipt is here!"

Now that there were two of them at the same store, surely it wasn't just a coincidence anymore, right?

Some people started to suspect this product.

The store became chaotic and many people didn't want to queue anymore.

If the quality of the product wasn't assured, then who would still dare to buy and use this product?

A woman's face was the most important to her. If one's face was disfigured, that would ruin the rest of her life!

It was chaotic at the store, and the store manager was close to tears. They couldn't do business anymore and there were even people calling for refunds.

There were even people calling in to complain!

"Calm down, everyone! Please calm down! I...oh no! Stop fighting! Stop fighting!"

The scene was a mess and somebody started fighting out of nowhere, so more people started fighting as well and the shelves were pushed over.

Sun Ling was watching in a car not too faraway and cackling loudly.

"HAHAHA! This is only the beginning! Once this occurs at more than a dozen stores, I'm going to see how Lin Group tries to explain themselves!"

If more than a dozen stores had the same problem, that would only prove that Lin Group's new product was the problem.

Who would still dare to use a skincare product that disfigured faces?

This wasn't the first time Sun Ling was pulling such a stunt. But this time round, he had spent a lot to make sure this matter really blew up.

Once Lin Group's new product was labeled as problematic and associated with possible disfigurement, Lin Group wouldn't be able to sell anymore product, and they were going to have great trouble trying to settle this matter, since cash compensation wasn't always enough.

"Trying to fight with me? You guys are still too green!"

Sun Ling smiled. He knew that once this thing started, it would only get bigger and more out of control. It was only a matter of time before the entire region would start to suspect Lin Group of selling inferior goods.

When that happened, Lin Yuzhen and her company was going to die defending themselves!

After watching and laughing for a while, Sun Ling drove away.

After driving off, Lin Yuzhen arrived at this store.

She was making her rounds to the various stores to check out the sales situation, but she didn't expect something like this to happen.

Once she got the news, Lin Yuzhen immediately drove to the nearest shop.

"How did this happen?" Lin Yuzhen saw that the entire shopfront was chaotic and she was so frantic that she wanted to hop out of the car immediately.

"Wait," Jiang Ning pulled her back. "What do you want to do?"

"I have to explain things to them!" Lin Yuzhen replied anxiously. "There's definitely no problems with our product, and this is not supposed to happen at all!"

Lin Group had very strict checks on quality, so this was not supposed to happen even if one had sensitive skin.

She had to explain and tell the consumers that Lin Group would never do anything like this!

"It's too chaotic over there and it's not safe for you to go over," Jiang Ning said directly.

He wasn't dumb. He could tell immediately that someone was behind all of this.

And this sort of method was really underhanded too.

"That's right, Yuzhen, you can't go over. Someone is clearly purposely stirring up trouble among these people." Ye Qingwu had come along and she figured it out too. "I'm afraid they're actually waiting for you to go over and they've laid a trap for you too."

Ye Qingwu had seen others use such ploys in the entertainment circle too.

"Then what should we do?"

They couldn't find the mastermind in such a short time.

And even if they did, they had to deal with the situation properly, otherwise that would be a fatal blow to Lin Group's new product!

"I'll go," said Ye Qingwu.

"What?" Lin Yuzhen shook her head. "No!"

"It's even more dangerous for you!"

She was a public figure!

"Jiang Ning can go with me, Yuzhen, you just stay in the car. Don't worry, I've seen this sort of false accusations before and I know how to handle them."

Ye Qingwu turned to look at Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning nodded.

Indeed, both Jiang Ning and Ye Qingwu had thought of the same way to handle this sudden crisis.

"Yuzhen, be good and stay in the car, alright?"

He then walked towards the store with Ye Qingwu.

"Return my money! Return my money right now!"

"Doesn't your conscience hurt by earning this money? You've caused harm to others!"

"So much for trusting you! You actually sold us skincare products with poison inside!"

"Return my money! I don't want these goods anymore! Return my money, or I'll smash your store!"

The crowd outside was all riled up and many of them were now on the side of those false accusers and shouting on their behalf.

The store manager and his staff tried their best to calm everyone down, but there was no way of that happening.

It was as if everyone was on fire and had exploded.

PIANG!!

There was suddenly a loud smashing noise!

Jiang Ning had flung a huge vase at the door onto the ground and it broke into many pieces.

"Everyone be quiet!!" Jiang Ning gave a loud and thunderous shout.

It was so loud that everyone felt their ears were ringing.

Suddenly everyone was quiet.

They all turned to find that there was a woman next to Jiang Ning.

Ye Qingwu removed her sunglasses and cap to reveal her flawless face.

"It's Ye Qingwu!"

"Why is she here?"

"Ye Qingwu, the product you're advertising for has a problem!"

Some people started shouting out from among the crowd.

Ye Qingwu smiled faintly and nodded to greet everyone.

She walked to the man who claimed that his wife had been disfigured and held her hand out. "Could you pass me the bottle that you bought from this store?"

The man was frozen on the spot. He didn't know why Ye Qingwu was here.

Ye Qingwu took it directly from his hands. "This bottle, right?"

The man nodded woodenly and she didn't say anything. She just opened the cover, squeezed some product out and applied it to her own face.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Everyone was shocked.

Everyone was staring at Ye Qingwu with open mouths and wide eyes.

They watched as she squeezed some product out and covered her face evenly with it. Her expression was calm and didn't look nervous or worried at all.

The bottle in her hand was the product that man said was toxic and could cause disfigurement!

Ye Qingwu was a big celebrity and she dared to put that on her own face?

Was she nuts?!

Jiang Ning was right beside her.

He knew that in order to settle these false accusations, the best way was to use it in front of everyone, and the effect was best if someone as influential as Ye Qingwu did it.

No woman didn't take good care of her own face, especially a singer like Ye Qingwu.

Their face was even more important than their life!

Why else would so many celebrities spend so much money and effort on skincare and plastic surgery?

But now Ye Qingwu was using this supposedly toxic product to apply to her own face!

"This sort of skincare product should be applied gently. Rub it in slowly and it will help with absorption," Ye Qingwu said with a smile as she rubbed it on. "This product is gentle on the skin and even people with sensitive skin shouldn't have any problems. You can watch how I apply it."

She looked like she was introducing the product and didn't claim that there was no issue with the product. But everything that she did was telling everyone one thing very clearly.

There was no problem with Lin Group's new product.

It didn't cause allergies or disfigurement, and most certainly had no poison in it!

The people standing in front of her were stunned. Everyone knew how important a celebrity's face was to her. Ye Qingwu was only a spokesperson.

and they weren't surprised if she hadn't used the product before herself.

That was how the industry worked these days after all. But now it looked like Ye Qingwu had actually used it before and had a good understanding of the product.

She only dared to use it because there was no problem with it.

So how did someone become disfigured because of it?

Many people's attention were now back on those two men.

They were both frozen.

Their backup plans didn't include a scenario in which Ye Qingwu herself appeared!

Even if Lin Yuzhen appeared, they would continue to accuse her and smear her reputation. But Ye Qingwu...she was now even using herself as a test subject, so there was no point in them saying anything!

"I'm not sure how your wife, and your daughter, used this product?"

Ye Qingwu turned to look at the two men. "Could you tell me what happened?"

"I..."

"We..."

The two of them stammered, then glanced at each other and decided to just go with their original plan regardless.

"It doesn't matter! She became like this after using your product!"

"That's right! Your product has a problem! It has poison in it!"

They started shouting in hope of riling up the crowd again, but nobody cared about them now.

Their expressions started to look a little nasty now.

"So why did you have a problem when you used it, but nothing happened to me when I used the product from the same bottle?" Ye Qingwu asked with a frown. "Besides, usually women buy this sort of skincare product themselves because they need to choose the one that is most suitable for their skin type. I'm surprised that these two gentlemen here are so nice to your wife and daughter."

Almost everyone in line were women. There were extremely few men among them.

Once Ye Qingwu mentioned this, many people started to look suspiciously at the two men.

How could it be so coincidental?

How did only these two men buy problematic bottles?

One was for his wife and one was for his daughter, and they were nearly disfigured.

But they had never heard anything like this from other people around them.

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Qingwu dared to use this product in front of other people. Surely her face was no less important than others', right?

Of course not!

There was something amiss!

There was something fishy!

"You're...you're just trying to defend yourself!" one of the men had a red face now and didn't even know how to argue anymore.

"I didn't try to explain anything," Ye Qingwu replied with a smile.

"You...?"

The man got even more anxious. "I...I'm not going to talk to you anymore! I'm going to raise a complaint, I'm going to sue you!"

He quickly threw a glance at his partner to run but Jiang Ning was standing in front of him.

"Since we're all here, then how can you leave without settling this matter?" said Jiang Ning calmly. "You think you can go after making false accusations here? You think we'll let you off so easily?"

"I...I didn't make any false accusations!" the man quickly tried to defend himself.

"He's obviously making false claims! He's guilty, so he keeps avoiding eye contact!"

"I told you that these people were here to make trouble. Nobody else has reported a problem, but somehow they were the only ones disfigured?"

"And it's two grown men no less! Even though my boyfriend loves me so dearly, I wouldn't get him to buy this for me! They're definitely fishy!"

"I remember them! They cut the queue yesterday so I didn't get to buy a bottle! So these people purposely bought the product to make trouble!"

Suddenly there was an uproar in the crowd as everything became clear now.

These men had made false claims!

The two men paled and immediately tried to make a run for it, but the crowd surrounded them.

After being fooled and used, this angry crowd wasn't going to take this lying down.

"AHH!! AH!!!"

Soon there were howls of pain as they endured so many punches and kicks from the crowd before they finally managed to break free from the crowd and disappeared round the corner.

"Run! Hurry up and run!"

"We've been found out, we have to tell Guo Sangel!"

They ran like crazy and suddenly came to a halt. The men in front of them made them tremble in fear.

Huang Yuming was standing there with some of the wolves behind him. His expression was calm but he looked murderous.

"Take them away and ask who's behind all this," said Huang Yuming.

Back at the storefront.

Ye Qingwu waved and got everyone to quieten down.

"Everyone, this product definitely has no quality issues and I've tried it out myself. If you have any issues, I am willing to be responsible for it," she said loudly. "The most important thing to a woman is her own face. Lin Group is willing to ensure every consumer's health and safety, and they will not try to cheat you or do anything against their conscience. I hope you can believe them, and believe me too!"

Since Ye Qingwu had said so, then who would suspect the product anymore?

She was tying her own reputation to this product. Which celebrity would do that?

If Ye Qingwu wasn't sure that there was no issue with the product, she wouldn't dare to put her reputation at risk no matter how much Lin Group paid her.

Ye Qingwu's public demonstration of using the product on herself was more real and convincing compared to any advertisement!

"We believe you! We believe Lin Group too!"

"We believe our goddess! We believe in Lin Group's products!"

"We support our goddess and we support Lin Group!"

.....

The shouts were loud and resounded like the waves. Just a few minutes ago, this was the same crowd that might have resulted in an irreversible situation. But now, everything had been solved perfectly!

And this incident might even make more people trust and support Lin Group!

Lin Yuzhen's eyes teared up in the car. She really felt like rushing over to give Ye Qingwu a big hug now!



Rate the Translation to Get 3 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

This was originally a crisis that could have caused a smear on Lin Group's reputation that was impossible to get rid of.

But Ye Qingwu had stood up and used her own actions to dispel any suspicions the customers had.

This had resolved the crisis and it became another round of promotion that increased the trust the consumers had in this new product!

Ye Qingwu had used her own reputation to guarantee this product.

Lin Yuzhen's eyes were all red and she was so touched.

When Jiang Ning and Ye Qingwu walked back to the car, Lin Yuzhen ran over and hugged Ye Qingwu.

"Qingwu! How am I ever going to thank you enough for this!"

Ye Qingwu laughed and patted Lin Yuzhen's back. "You just need to treat me to a session at the hot spring."

"OK!"

The two of them hooked arms like they were real sisters.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. This matter wasn't finished.

He got the driver to send Lin Yuzhen and Ye Qingwu back to the hotel while he waited by the roadside.

Huang Yuming's car arrived in no time, and Jiang Ning got in.

"Got it. It's Sun Ling alright," said Huang Yuming. "These men are just small fry and they follow Guo Sange, the guy you beat up the last time. Their aim is to smear the reputation of Lin Group's new product and make consumers distrust the company."

He didn't expect Ye Qingwu's actions to turn a crisis into an opportunity to promote the product.

Sun Ling was probably going to have a heart attack when he realized what happened.

"Since this fellow is playing dirty, then I don't have to be polite anymore."

Jiang Ning had told Sun Ling before that he wouldn't say anything if Lin Group had lost fair and square to Sun Ling.

But if Sun Ling resorted to such underhanded means, then Jiang Ning wasn't going to play nice anymore.

"Need me to get that fellow?" asked Huang Yuming.

Jiang Ning didn't have to do any of this himself. In Jianzhou now, Huang Yuming only had to say the word, and nobody in the illegal circle here would dare to defy him.

It was nothing for him to capture that Sun Ling!

"No, I'll look for him myself," replied Jiang Ning. "Let's go."

"Got it!" Huang Yuming instructed the driver, "Go to the Sun house."

Sun Ling was now in the Sun house.

Sun Qi had grounded him and he couldn't go anywhere. But since Jiang Ning wanted to see him, Huang Yuming was going to barge into the Sun house and drag Sun Ling out.

Sun Ling was cursing and swearing when he heard that his plan had failed.

He had smashed practically everything in the room.

"Ye Qingwu! Ye Qingwu!"

"How dare you ruin my plans!!"

Sun Ling was shaking from anger. This scheme was definitely going to ruin Lin Group overnight and Lin Yuzhen wouldn't even have a chance to defend herself.

Once the consumers lost their trust in Lin Group, there was no way they could expand any further.

They could dream on!

But in the end?

Ye Qingwu had actually used the new product on herself in front of everyone and dispelled any suspicions on the spot.

If even a big celebrity dared to use the product and even trusted it 100%, then there was nothing for ordinary folk to worry about.

Whose face was more precious than a popular singer like Ye Qingwu's?

"Bloody hell!!" Sun Ling was furious and he wished he could slap Ye Qingwu right now. She actually dared to ruin his plans.

"A popular celebrity eh? Since you dare to offend me, I'm going to make you pay!"

He pulled out his phone and called his sisters.

It wasn't difficult for his sisters to make trouble for Ye Qingwu given their status in the entertainment industry.

She was just a woman who knew how to sing! He was going to teach her what happened to those who offended him.

At the same time,

In the Sun house's living room.

Sun Qi was standing in the living room with a slight frown on his face. He didn't look too good.

"Aren't all of you being too outrageous?" Sun Qi shouted. "How could you barge into my house and demand to see Sun Ling? Who are you even?!"

Jiang Ning glanced at him and calmly replied. "Since you don't know how to teach your son, I'll help you teach him."

"What audacity!" Sun Qi bellowed. "Are you asking to die?"

"The one asking to die is you!" Huang Yuming laughed coldly. He waved and the wolves took a step forward. Their presence was enough to scare Sun Qi.

"Looks like the disappearance of the Yang family didn't teach you guys a lesson."

He narrowed his eyes, "And it seems like the death of the five tigers of Jianzhou wasn't shocking enough either. If I don't kill a few more, it seems like there will always be people who don't know their place!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

BOOOM.

Sun Qi felt his heart pound wildly when he heard what Huang Yuming said.

He looked straight at Huang Yuming as he felt his blood rushing through his body.

"You...you are..."

"Huang Yuming," replied Huang Yuming. "Huang Yuming from Donghai!"

Sun Qi's face instantly paled.

Those people from Donghai!

Huang Yuming and his men were the ones who wiped out the Yang family in one night and killed off Yang Xiao and the five tigers of Jianzhou!

It was them!

He suddenly didn't dare to say anymore because he was too frightened.

Why were they here? What did they want with Sun Ling?

"Mr Sun, my Big Boss might let you off for speaking this way because he's magnanimous. But his brothers here might not let you off!"

Brother Gou and the other men were like ferocious wolves!

All of them were staring at Sun Qi right now. Once Jiang Ning gave the order, they would instantly tear Sun Qi to pieces.

BA DUM! BA DUM!

Sun Qi's heart started pounding loudly and he felt like half his soul had left his body.

The men in front of him were the ones who wiped out both the Yang family and the five tigers of Jianzhou! His family couldn't afford to offend these people at all.

What did this useless son of his do out there without his knowledge?! How did he offend someone as scary as Jiang Ning?

"I'm really sorry!" Sun Qi's tone of voice softened and he quickly said, "I have not taught my son well, I'm not sure how Sun Ling has..."

"Tell him to come out," Jiang Ning calmly cut him off.

"Call Sun Ling out right now!" Sun Qi immediately turned to shout at the butler. "Hurry up!"

He didn't dare to do anything else. If Sun Ling secretly escaped at this point, then the Sun family would possibly be wiped out this very day.

Sun Ling was on the phone in his room.

"Sis, you have to avenge me on this one. It's that Ye Qingwu! You have to think of a way to make her life difficult, or better still, ruin her career!" Sun Ling said nastily. "This stupid slut got in the way of my plans and made the Sun family suffer such a great loss. I'm definitely making her pay!"

"Young Master, Master wants to see you," the butler called out from outside.

Sun Ling looked up with an annoyed face.

"Ok Sis, I'm counting on you two sisters of mine to help! Dad's calling me so I have to hang up."

After hanging up, Sun Ling walked out and scoffed. "What does my dad want?"

"You will know when you get to the living room," the butler said with a lowered head. He didn't dare to tell Sun Ling what was happening.

Sun Ling scoffed and was annoyed because he still had some more underhanded methods that he wanted to tell his sister about. He wanted his sisters to completely destroy Ye Qingwu's reputation so that nobody would buy anything she represented.

"Ok fine, I'll go to the living room."

Sun Ling walked towards the living room.

His father had grounded him since the day before because he wanted Sun Ling to stay inside and reflect on his actions. Even meals were sent straight to his room.

And now Sun Qi wanted him in the living room?

Sun Ling didn't know if that old man just wanted to scold him again.

He merely didn't pass the test! That's all!

He was the only boy in his generation and Sun Qi only had this one son. If Sun

Qi didn't pass the family to him, who else could he pass it to?

Sun Ling was confident of this, so he wasn't afraid.

Even though he was a spoilt brat and didn't know how to do anything else, the Sun family was still going to land up in his hands. It was just a matter of time.

He made his way to the living room quickly and wasn't feeling guilty at all since he knew that the family was his sooner or later.

He was more interested in finding out how much more Sun Qi could scold him for.

"Dad, what is it now?"

Before even entering the living room, Sun Ling spoke in such a displeased voice. He had clearly spoken in this way on purpose.

Sun Qi's expression became nasty. He could hear Sun Ling's annoyance from that voice. But now, Sun Qi was even angrier than Sun Ling!

"Kneel down now!"

Sun Ling had just walked into the living room when he was greeted by a loud shout from Sun Qi.

Sun Qi's voice was so loud that Sun Ling's body shook.

He looked up to see that the chair reserved for the highest position of the family was taken up by the person he didn't want to see the most right now – Jiang Ning!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

What was Jiang Ning doing here?!

"You... what are you doing in my house! And you're even in that seat!" Sun Ling roared angrily. "Are you asking to die?!"

He was about to dash over and pull Jiang Ning out of that chair when Sun Qi blocked him and slapped him hard across the face.

PAK!

The sound was crisp.

And very loud.

Sun Ling was stunned. He clutched his red and stinging face, and his ears were ringing. He looked at his own father with a look of disbelief on his face.

He couldn't believe it at all. Sun Qi actually hit him!

"Dad, you... you hit me?!" Sun Ling's eyes grew wide. "You hit me because of someone who deserves to die?"

Sun Qi became even angrier and more worked up when he heard Sun Ling say something like that in front of Jiang Ning.

PAK!

PAK!

He slapped Sun Ling another two times. Sun Ling staggered a few steps backwards and nearly lost his balance.

"You're outrageous!" Sun Qi roared. "How dare you speak like this to Mr Jiang? You're so ill mannered!"

Mr Jiang?

Sun Ling was even more confused.

What Mr Jiang? Why was Sun Qi being so polite to Jiang Ning? Wasn't he just a man who married into Lin Yuzhen's family?

How could he have such power over his father?

"Dad..."

"Don't call me Dad!" Sun Qi bellowed. "My family doesn't have a person like

you!"

Sun Qi's face was all red and started panicking when he realized that Jiang Ning was still silent.

He knew that as long as Jiang Ning just nodded his head, the Sun family would disappear from the face of the earth.

Sun Ling really shouldn't have ever offended someone as terrifying as Jiang Ning.

"Kneel down now!"

Sun Qi kicked Sun Ling hard behind the knees and caused Sun Ling to kneel on the floor. "Kowtow to Mr Jiang and apologize and beg for his forgiveness!"

"DAD!"

Sun Ling was really angry now.

"Kowtow now!" Sun Qi didn't care. He clenched his teeth and continued to roar coldly, "Do you want me to kowtow instead? Is that it?"

Sun Ling's head was spinning as he looked up to see Jiang Ning sitting there calmly. Jiang Ning didn't even look at him and continued drinking his tea quietly.

He suddenly felt like he knew what was going on now.

"Mr...Mr Jiang..."

Sun Ling's lips were trembling as he stared straight at Jiang Ning and tried to guess who he really was.

Judging from Sun Qi's reaction, Jiang Ning was definitely no ordinary person!

What was that about him marrying into the Lin family?

Bullshit!

If Jiang Ning were merely a useless son-in-law, then his father wouldn't be so scared that his legs were trembling.

"Are you surprised?" Jiang Ning put his cup down and looked down at Sun Ling. "Are you wondering what went wrong? Or why you're kneeling here while I'm sitting in the most important position and enjoying a cup of tea?"

Sun Ling didn't say anything. That was exactly what he was thinking about.

"I gave you a chance," said Jiang Ning. "But you didn't take it."

He had told Sun Ling to compete fairly with his product.

But Sun Ling had played one dirty trick after another in order to ruin both Lin Group's new product and Lin Group itself!

That made him deserving of death.

"You thought I wanted to rely on the Yang family to stabilize my position in this region?" Jiang Ning scoffed. "You're wrong. I'm the one who wiped the Yang family out."

Jiang Ning had said these words very casually, but Sun Ling felt like he had just been struck by lightning. He was completely stunned.

Jiang Ning was the one who wiped out the Yang family.

That huge and powerful family had been wiped out overnight by Jiang Ning?

And he had actually offended such a terrifying character?!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

WOOOONG.

Sun Ling felt a terrible ringing in his ears. He couldn't even hear his own heartbeat anymore.

He finally understood why Sun Qi was so terrified.

"Mr Jiang, Sun Ling is still young and immature and didn't know better, so he ended up offending you. I hope that you can give him a chance," Sun Qi pleaded in a trembling voice. "I'm willing to give up any companies that are in direct competition with Lin Group and move out from Jianzhou!"

"You think Lin Group can't win your family?"

"No! No! That's not what I meant!"

Sun Qi was about to get down on his knees from his terrible fright.

"I'm not an unreasonable person," said Jiang Ning. "The one who played dirty is Sun Ling, so I'll only settle the feud with him alone. Mr Sun, tell me, if nobody teaches your son properly won't he grow up to become a terrible person who harms others?"

Sun Qi nodded and his face was filled with bitterness.

"I'm going to give you a chance to educate your child. Do you want it?"

"Yes! Yes!" replied Sun Qi hurriedly.

Jiang Ning didn't say anymore and picked up his teacup again.

Sun Ling's face paled.

He turned to Sun Qi and kept shaking his head.

"Dad! No! Don't!" Sun Ling started to cry out anxiously.

"Men!" Sun Qi gave orders, "Break Young Master's legs!"

"No! No! No!!" Sun Ling struggled and tried to get away, but Sun Qi's men held him down. Sun Qi shouted another order, "If he tries to resist, break his arms too!"

CRAAAK! CRAAAK!

Two bone cracking sounds were heard as the bats hit Sun Ling's legs hard.

It was immediately followed by a bloodcurdling scream.

"AHHHH!!"

Sun Ling convulsed and fainted from the pain.

Everyone in the Sun house was fearful and trembling. They didn't even dare to breathe too loudly.

Sun Qi's eyes were bloodshot but he still clasped his hands politely towards Jiang Ning. "Mr Jiang, thank you for being so generous and gave our family another chance. Thank you!"

He had broken his own son's legs to make him a cripple and he even had to thank Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning got up and rapped a finger lightly on the table.

"Mr Sun, I feel that your son doesn't have the ability to take over the family business. You should consider carefully who you need to pass the reins to."

Jiang Ning then left with his men.

"Yes! Yes! I will think through this carefully and I will take Mr Jiang's suggestion!" Sun Qi called out politely behind Jiang Ning.

Of course Sun Qi wasn't going to argue back.

Jiang Ning's words were so obvious. If the next head of the family was still Sun Ling then Jiang Ning was going to wipe the Sun family out in one night!

This cold warning made Sun Qi shudder.

He didn't dare to disobey Jiang Ning and didn't dare to even be unhappy about it.

The Yang family was an example of what might happen if he tried!

So what if they had a crazy woman like Yang Xiao around?

Even the five tigers died so terribly!

The Sun family was nothing compared to the Yang family, so there was no way he was going to offend Jiang Ning.

"You unfilial child! You rebellious son!" Sun Qi shouted at the unconscious Sun Ling.

He had to continue to hold the fort for a few more decades, or at least until he had another son. He was going to keep a close eye and make sure he didn't produce another Sun Ling.

"Send Sun Ling to the village and just make sure he doesn't have to worry about his daily expenses," ordered Sun Qi.

He was upset that the Sun family had ended up in this state. After the Yang family disappeared, they actually had an excellent opportunity to become even more powerful.

But now?

It was good enough to stay alive!

"Also, sell off any businesses that are in direct competition with Lin Group. It doesn't matter even if we make a loss."

Sun Qi now knew why the Yang family was exterminated.

They hadn't offended Jiang Ning, but they had offended Lin Group. Offending Lin Group was worse than offending Jiang Ning.

Lin Group wanted to expand and grow in the region and they were unstoppable. He knew that he wasn't too late and he could at least keep the family.

"I will get it done right now," replied the butler politely as he stood there nervously.

He had never seen Sun Qi so nervous or so wary before.

They would make a pretty hefty loss by selling away these businesses, but after seeing how Sun Qi was determined, the butler knew that they had no other choice.

"Also," Sun Qi looked at the butler as he narrowed his eyes and took a deep breath. "Don't let anyone know what happened here today!"

His family had offended Jiang Ning and suffered a great loss because of his stupid son and he didn't want anybody to know. It wasn't because he felt embarrassed, but because he was hoping that some other idiot out there would offend Jiang Ning as well!

The Sun family wasn't going down alone!

Meanwhile,

Lin Yuzhen exhaled deeply in the hotel room.

They had won this battle!

There was no problem for Lin Group to enter the southeast market. This new product alone had taken up nearly 30% of the market share in just one week.

That was a really crazy achievement!

This was pretty much a bestseller.

"Qingwu, I really can't thank you enough!" Lin Yuzhen took Ye Qingwu's hand in hers. "If it wasn't for you, I don't know how long it would take for us to get this sort of result."

"How could that be?" Ye Qingwu smiled. "Given your talent and hard work, I'm sure it's not hard for you to do this. I believe in you!"

"Ohhhhh you're so nice! You say such nice things!" Lin Yuzhen laughed as she held onto Ye Qingwu's hand. "Follow me back to Donghai and we'll go for a spa session together?"

Ye Qingwu looked up. Jiang Ning came walking in.

Jiang Ning didn't come back with them earlier, so he must have gone to settle the problem.

But what she didn't know was that Jiang Ning was better at solving the one who created the problem.

"All settled?" asked Ye Qingwu.

"Yup." Jiang Ning just nodded and didn't elaborate.

He walked over to Lin Yuzhen and said, "Your mission here is considered done. There are plenty of staff who will continue the work here, you can relax now."

The plan to move into the southeast was successful, and Lin Yuzhen didn't need to stay and monitor the situation anymore. The staff that they had trained and groomed could take over now.

"Ok, let's get ready to return to Donghai."

It hadn't been a long time, but the pressure was tremendous. The short time Lin Yuzhen had spent in Jianzhou had made her mature greatly.

She had increased her understanding of expanding and opening new markets, but she also got a big boost in terms of ability and self-confidence.

"Qingwu?" she turned to look at Ye Qingwu.

"I don't think I can go back to Donghai with you," Ye Qingwu smiled.

She had barely managed to squeeze out enough time in her schedule to film the ad for Lin Group, and there was a lot of other work for her to do.

But of course, she would do whatever she could for Lin Yuzhen, no matter how busy she was.

"I have a lot of jobs waiting for me. There are plenty of opportunities for us to go for a spa session together, I'll look for you in Donghai when I have time, ok?"

Lin Yuzhen pouted and was a little sad.

But she knew that Ye Qingwu was really busy, and even Lin Yuzhen herself was very busy, so she wouldn't have that much time to rest and relax.

"Alright then," she nodded a little sadly. "Once you have time, you have to come to Donghai, ok?"

"You can always come to Shenghai too," replied Ye Qingwu.

After they chatted for a while more, they finally parted ways and went to pack their things.

.....

Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen returned to Donghai, and an amazing smell came out from the house.

"Mum! We're back!" Lin Yuzhen sniffed the air. "What are you cooking? It smells amazing!"

She didn't even put her things down and ran straight to the kitchen.

"The kitchen is very oily and smoky, don't come in!"

Su Mei stuck a head out and looked around. "Where's Jiang Ning? Is he back? I made him some snacks."

Lin Yuzhen pouted sadly. She was Su Mei's biological child! But Su Mei had made these things for Jiang Ning instead.

"He's back too! Parking the car! Humph!"

Lin Yuzhen walked to the living room, dumped her bag on the sofa and purposely pouted as she started playing with her phone and ignored Su Mei.

"Mum, I'm back," Jiang Ning walked into the house with a smile. "What did you cook for me? It smells great!"

"Yuzhen got a little carsick on the way home, so she might not be able to eat much, I'll have it all."

"Sure, I didn't make much anyway. As long as there's enough for you."

Su Mei then went back into the kitchen.

Lin Yuzhen really wanted to cry now. Her position in this household was getting lower and lower.

How did Jiang Ning get more love as a son-in-law than her!

"Stupid Jiang Ning! Stupid Jiang Ning!" Lin Yuzhen muttered under her breath as she scrolled through the news.

Suddenly a line of red text caught her eyes and her expression changed instantly.

She started reading the article and her face paled. The hand holding the phone also started trembling.

She was angry!

"How did this happen? Why did something like that happen?!" Lin Yuzhen murmured. She then turned around and called out, "Jiang Ning! Come over! Quickly!"

Jiang Ning walked over and saw how anxious Lin Yuzhen was. He quickly asked, "What's wrong?"

"Look at this!" Lin Yuzhen passed her phone to Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning frowned when he saw the headlines in red bold letters.

"Popular Singer Ye Qingwu Two-timing? Can You Still Trust a Celebrity with No Morals?"

Jiang Ning could tell that this report was all out to smear Ye Qingwu's reputation!

"How did something like that happen?"

Lin Yuzhen had complete trust in Ye Qingwu's character.

What was this about two-timing? Ye Qingwu wasn't even dating anyone! She had asked Ye Qingwu about this.

This sort of accusation could ruin Ye Qingwu!

Lin Yuzhen immediately gave Ye Qingwu a call, but nobody picked up even after she called a few times and she became even more anxious.

"Don't be anxious," Jiang Ning consoled her. "She's been in the entertainment circle for some years now and I'm sure she's been through this sort of thing and she knows how to handle it."

Besides, Ye Qingwu had an experienced manager like Wang Wei who knew how to protect Ye Qingwu.

"I have a bad feeling about this," said Lin Yuzhen.

The main point of this headline wasn't about Ye Qingwu two-timing and being a bad example. The main point was the second line about how she was immoral and couldn't be trusted.

"Yup. I'm afraid this is targeted at Lin Group too," Jiang Ning nodded.

He could tell too.

In fact, Ye Qingwu was probably dragged down by Lin Group.

Someone was launching secret attacks against Lin Group and was targeting their new product. They had purposely tried to smear Ye Qingwu's reputation so that people would lose faith in her, and her fans and consumers would not believe her words anymore.

Could you still trust a promiscuous person?

Could the products she represented be trusted like what she said?

That was impossible.

The mastermind's ultimate motive was to attack Lin Group and make the sales of their new product drop.

What an aggressive move.

This sort of tactic didn't just attack Lin Group, but also destroyed Ye Qingwu along the way.

"I can't get through to her, and I can't get through to Wang Wei either," Lin Yuzhen was really anxious now.

She didn't want Ye Qingwu's future to be ruined because of Lin Group.

It was hard for any celebrity with this sort of reputation to have any future. There was no way for her to make a comeback after this.

Ye Qingwu had told Lin Yuzhen that she had even quarreled with her family to chase her dreams, so if her dreams were dashed and she had no home to go back to, Lin Yuzhen didn't know if Ye Qingwu could take it.

"Jiang Ning, what do we do now?"

"I can't let Qingwu's dreams be destroyed just because someone wants to attack Lin Group!" Lin Yuzhen was on the verge of tears.

Ye Qingwu had just returned to Shanghai and she had to face a problem like this. Could she handle it?

"Don't be anxious," Jiang Ning patted Lin Yuzhen's shoulder. "Tell you what, I'll pay Shanghai a visit, so don't be worried anymore, ok?"

"Jiang Ning..." Lin Yuzhen looked at him. "I'm always bringing you so much trouble."

"That's exactly why I exist. I'm here to solve all your troubles," Jiang Ning laughed. He held Lin Yuzhen's face in his hands and said, "Stay at home and have a good meal, brush your teeth and go to bed, ok? I'll come back soon."

"Ok," Lin Yuzhen nodded, then kissed Jiang Ning on the cheek. "I...I'll be waiting for you at home."

Huang Yuming came with Brother Gou and a few others in no time.

Su Mei had just emerged from the kitchen and brought the snacks out. When she noticed that Jiang Ning was going out, she asked, "Didn't you just come back? Going out again?"

He hadn't eaten the snacks yet!

"I have to attend to some matters, I'll be back soon," Jiang Ning smiled and popped one of the snacks into his mouth even though it was very hot. "Ooh it smells so good!"

"It's very hot! Don't do that!" Su Mei chided him, "I'll put these in a box, you can have it on the way!"

Jiang Ning got into the car, waved to Lin Yuzhen, then headed for the airport.

He was thinking of going to Shenghai soon anyway.

He wondered if Liu Xiaodao had healed up already. That side should be taking some action by now.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Meanwhile,

Shenghai, Star Entertainment.

Ye Qingwu was ordered to see the boss the moment she touched down in Shenghai.

The moment she stepped into the office, she was scolded continuously for three whole hours and it didn't stop at all.

"What nonsense is this! Really nonsense!"

"Who do you think you are now? Do you still think you're any ordinary girl on the street?"

"Ye Qingwu, Ye Qingwu. Do you know how much the company has spent on grooming you? Is this how you repay the company? What else do you know besides creating problems for the company?"

Ye Qingwu didn't say anything as her boss, Bai Xiaofei, continued to pace up and down and shout at her.

As the boss of Star Entertainment, it hadn't been easy for Bai Xiaofei to chance upon someone like Ye Qingwu who could make loads of money for him, so he spent a lot of money to groom and package her. It was finally time to reap the rewards, but Ye Qingwu just kept giving him new problems.

He almost had to banish her as a result!

"Just not too long ago, you offended the Su family. Don't you know what position the Su family has in Shenghai?" Bai Xiaofei scoffed, "They could have put you out of business! They could have chased you out of the entertainment industry!"

"If I hadn't gone to look for Su Bowen, the head of the family, did you think you could still be standing here now?"

Ye Qingwu remained silent.

Wang Wei couldn't really hold it in anymore.

The Su family didn't create trouble for Ye Qingwu anymore not because Bai Xiaofei had visited Su Bowen and asked him for help. It was because of Jiang Ning!

It wasn't thanks to Bai Xiaofei's efforts at all.

"Boss..."

"It's not your turn to speak!" Bai Xiaofei turned to glare at Wang Wei and cut him off. "I haven't gotten to you yet!"

"I got you to be Ye Qingwu's manager and not to be her partner in crime. Do you know how to do your job at all?"

Bai Xiaofei continued to yell angrily, "Will you only be satisfied after she's been thrown out of the entertainment circle? Will you only learn after our company suffers tremendous losses?"

"Boss, we didn't do anything wrong," Wang Wei insisted.

They really hadn't done anything wrong. Rumors were strife in the entertainment industry.

There were even celebrities who weren't very popular who had to create rumors for themselves so as to attract attention.

"You didn't do anything wrong?" Bai Xiaofei had a strange smile on his face. "Every major news outlet is saying that Qingwu is two timing and has poor moral values and is a celebrity with a bad record. Don't you know what this means?"

Wang Wei replied, "Of course I know, but these are just rumors."

"Rumors? That depends on who's spreading them!" yelled Bai Xiaofei.

"The person behind all this is from the north! It's someone who is of very high standing in the entertainment circle and his aim is to destroy Ye Qingwu and our company!"

His back was heaving as he slammed a palm on the table.

"And the reason for doing so? It's all because Ye Qingwu went ahead to agree to be Lin Group's spokesperson without discussing with the company first! We're collateral damage in a corporate fight!"

Bai Xiaofei had been in this line for many years and he could see this attack very clearly.

He could accept being attacked or challenged by others head on, since this industry worked like that. If you didn't attack someone today, someone would attack you the next day anyway.

But if he had ended up offending someone he couldn't afford to because of

somebody else, then he had to shift all the blame onto Ye Qingwu!

"I will bear all responsibility!" Ye Qingwu suddenly spoke up. "If the company feels that I have impacted them negatively, then you can go ahead and terminate my contract!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Ye Qingwu!" Bai Xiaofei was furious as he pointed a finger at Ye Qingwu. "Do you think I don't dare to?!"

He never expected Ye Qingwu to speak to him like this.

She had caused so much trouble and might even drag his company down. And now she just simply told him to terminate her contract?

Did she think he didn't dare to do so?

"Be my guest." Ye Qingwu didn't seem bothered at all. "Agreeing to be Lin Group's spokesperson is my right. Our contract states very clearly that I have the right to choose such things, so it's not up to you."

She looked at Bai Xiaofei and calmly continued, "I've earned enough money for the company to repay you for everything you've done for me. We can terminate the contract."

Ye Qingwu couldn't be bothered to waste her saliva on him.

After she had become popular, the company had squeezed every single penny out of her.

They had made her appear repeatedly on various media channels and take on so many gigs, and the company had taken most of the money. And her?

She just wanted to sing, but the company even sent her to eat and drink with other people, making her wish she could exit this industry altogether.

And now she had the chance to do so.

"Ye Qingwu!" Bai Xiaofei was furious. "Do you know what you're talking about?!"

"If you dare to take a single step out of this company, I will not protect you anymore! Those people out there will destroy you easily and you'll regret this!"

Ye Qingwu just laughed.

She looked at him like she was looking at a fool. She didn't know where Bai Xiaofei found the confidence to say something like that to her.

When she had been forced to hide in Donghai because of Su Mingquan, where was this boss who claimed to be able to protect her?

Did he really think that Su Mingquan stopped bothering her because he had gone to plead with Su Bowen?

What was Bai Xiaofei even?

"I'm not sure about the rest, but I'm very sure that I, Ye Qingwu, will never regret cutting ties with a boss like you!"

Ye Qingwu glared at Bai Xiaofei, then turned and left.

Bai Xiaofei was so angry he was trembling.

He wanted to scold Ye Qingwu hard to make her scared, then force her to gain the favor of one of the big bosses so as to be protected. But it seemed like Ye Qingwu would rather die.

"Get out! Get out!" he roared. "I'm going to see how you get through this crisis! You're doomed, you hear me? You're DOOMED! The entertainment industry will never have a place for you again!"

"Boss." Wang Wei's expression was equally nasty.

Bai Xiaofei had gone too far. Did he think that just because he was the boss, he could control Ye Qingwu for the rest of her life?

He didn't know that Ye Qingwu was now not someone to be trifled with.

And that was because she was now Lin Yuzhen's best friend, and Lin Yuzhen was protected by a man who doted on her with his life.

A powerful man who would even extend his protection to anyone who was Lin Yuzhen's friend!

Jiang Ning!

"What are you still doing here? Get out and get to work!" Bai Xiaofei glared at him and shouted. "There are so many other artistes in the company, we can always just promote another one!"

"No, Boss. I want to tell you that I quit." Wang Wei shook his head and went straight to the point. "I'm resigning, and I'll settle Ye Qingwu's contract termination."

He didn't give Bai Xiaofei a second glance and just walked right out.

BAM!

BAM!

The sound of something being smashed came out from the office. Nobody

sealed near the office dared to even breathe too loudly.

Ye Qingwu exhaled deeply after walking out of the office. She felt so relieved.

At first she was a little afraid, afraid that she would have nothing once she left the company, and she was always fearful of stepping out. But now she suddenly felt all relaxed.

She didn't have to appear on TV unnecessarily, she didn't have to sing at those events that she didn't like and she didn't have to accompany all those filthy old men who weren't really fans of her songs.

It wasn't a bad thing to live the way she wanted to.

"Why are you out here too?" Ye Qingwu turned and noticed that Wang Wei had come outside too.

"I've resigned," Wang Wei laughed. "I didn't want to stay in this broken company anymore either. If not for you, I wouldn't have been able to hold on."

"Qingwu, as long as you still want to sing, I'll be your manager," said Wang Wei seriously.

Ye Qingwu laughed.

She hadn't even thought about her future. The rumors about her were still spreading and it was so hard to wash off the label of being promiscuous and having a casual sort of lifestyle.

It was going to be difficult to resolve this issue since she had left the company and didn't have a PR team anymore.

RIIIIING.

Her phone suddenly started ringing.

Ye Qingwu's phone was confiscated the moment she reached the office, so after taking it back, she suddenly noticed that she had several missed calls and they were all from Lin Yuzhen.

She felt a warmth in her heart.

"Yuzhen, it's me," said Ye Qingwu. "I'm fine, don't worry."

"What? Jiang Ning is in Shenghai?"

She was surprised. She didn't expect Jiang Ning to come to Shenghai again.

The last time, Jiang Ning had come personally to settle Su Mingquan and got rid of that big problem she had with the Su family. This time, Jiang Ning was here again to help her with her troubles again.

"Yuzhen, thank you." Her eyes were a little red and her voice cracked.

She had earned so much money for the company over the last six years, but this was how things ended.

She had only gotten to know Lin Yuzhen recently, but Lin Yuzhen was always concerned about her, protected her with everything she had and never wanted to see her hurt.

After hanging up, Jiang Ning called shortly after that.

He had arrived in Shenghai and arranged to meet Ye Qingwu and Wang Wei at the hotel he was staying in.

The news on the internet had already reached its boiling point.

The two men involved in the rumor were still arguing who had been more intimate with Ye Qingwu and refused to give her up. They put up a good act and it seemed like these things had really happened, causing several netizens to call Ye Qingwu names.

They said she didn't have moral boundaries and actually two timed these men and that she was a loose woman!

They said she didn't have morals and was a bad example to the public, so they wanted to ban her from singing ever again.

This matter even affected the products that Ye Qingwu advertised for. Lin Group's new product's sales also started to slide.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Ye Qingwu never responded to any of those malicious articles and comments.

She knew that if she tried to defend herself, others would corner her and think that she was trying to cover up the truth.

Jiang Ning sat in the hotel room and leisurely made tea. There was no worry or anxiety on his face at all.

Ye Qingwu and Wang Wei sat down as they took the tea from Jiang Ning.

"Don't worry, this small trouble will be solved by tomorrow," said Jiang Ning calmly with a smile.

"By tomorrow?"

Wang Wei was shocked. So fast?

But Jiang Ning was sitting here and not doing anything. So how was this possible?

This sort of rumor in the entertainment industry was very hard to fix. The best way was to wait it out and let time fix it by itself. Anything else an artiste did could very well destroy herself instead.

"Thank you so much, I'm sorry you had to come all the way here."

Ye Qingwu had no doubt that it would be solved by the next day since Jiang Ning said so.

"You're welcome. This has happened because someone is trying to attack Lin Group and you ended up being part of it after all," said Jiang Ning. "Yuzhen has instructed me to make sure you don't get hurt."

"You really dote on Yuzhen," Ye Qingwu put her teacup down and her face was filled with envy. "I'm so happy for her."

There weren't many good men in the world, but Jiang Ning was definitely one of them.

Jiang Ning was so capable, so there would be many women who would throw themselves at him for sure. But Jiang Ning always remained devoted to Lin Yuzhen, and she really admired him for that.

Jiang Ning just smiled and didn't say anything.

He had been through so much in his life. He had seen darkness, cruelty, wickedness. Nobody knew these things better than Jiang Ning.

But that was precisely why Lin Yuzhen was so precious to him. This girl had a place in his heart since he was much younger, and her position in his heart was unmovable.

"Brother Ning, you said someone is trying to attack Lin Group, so do you have a plan to fight back?" Wang Wei took a sip of tea and asked out of concern. "I heard that the one who started these rumors about Qingwu come from the north, and they're of high standing in the entertainment industry, so they might be difficult to handle."

Jiang Ning poured the two of them more tea and said nonchalantly, "They're just small fry, and I don't have to do anything about them myself."

He hadn't come here just to help Ye Qingwu with this small trouble of hers.

It was time to shake up Shenghai.

Since Jiang Ning wasn't bothered by this at all, Ye Qingwu and Wang Wei were relieved.

They had witnessed what Jiang Ning could do. Since Jiang Ning let them drink tea in peace, that meant that even the biggest trouble in the world was as easily solved as drinking two cups of tea to Jiang Ning.

In the meantime, Huang Yuming and his men had made their move.

PAK!

PAK!

The lights were turned on and the warehouse lighted up.

Two celebrities had been captured and were trembling. These were the two men involved in the rumor about Ye Qingwu.

"Who...who are you people! Let us go now!"

"Let us go! We didn't offend you guys!"

The two of them were very frightened and didn't even know why they were suddenly kidnapped and brought to this place.

"Did I let you talk?" Brother Gou walked forward and sent them flying with a kick.

"Damn it, this girly sort of face gets to be a celebrity? I might break them with one kick!"

"Spare us! Spare us please!"

Both of them started pleading.

Huang Yuming waved his hand and the other men came forward and slapped the two of them unconscious.

"Let's start," he ordered calmly.

This sort of thing didn't need Jiang Ning to come here personally.

They were enough...



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

In no time, the wolves had stripped the two men of all their clothes and threw them onto a bed they had prepared. They made the two of them lie together and positioned them as scandalously as possible.

"Make sure their faces can be clearly seen."

Brother Gou laughed cheekily. He loved to do this sort of thing and it made him excited!

Since these two boys wanted to be famous and even tried to use Ye Qingwu to make themselves well known, then Brother Gou was going to help them out.

Many photos were taken, and Brother Gou had even brought Huang Fang along. Huang Fang's photography skills were excellent and the angles he chose made all of them give him a thumbs up and everyone said he was a genius.

"Brother Gou, all done!"

Huang Fang was very excited to be able to do something for Jiang Ning. Even if it was something very simple, he did it with great enthusiasm. Now that someone was trying to attack Lin Group, he was going to fight back with everything he had!

Lin Group was his family now!

"Not bad, your photography skills are really good!" Brother Gou patted Huang Fang's shoulder. "You'll go far in the future!"

"Thank you, Brother Gou!" Huang Fang quickly replied. "Leave this matter to me, I guarantee you that these two boys are going to be SO famous!"

Huang Fang left with the photos.

The wolves secretly sent the two boys to a hotel and called several reporters to wait outside the hotel and watch the two of them emerge from the same hotel.

That night at 1AM.

The most popular entertainment website in Shenghai suddenly published a whole bunch of very daring photos!

It was like an earthquake went through Shenghai's entertainment circle.

The photos showed two men not wearing anything with only a thin blanket covering their private parts. They were hugging each other tightly and looked just like lovers.

The more shocking part was how some of the photos caught a glimpse of some special toys and clothing on the bed, which made everyone call them perverts.

"Pretending to Fight Over a Woman, Secretly a Couple!"

The huge headline sent the two of them to their doom.

Their identities were immediately revealed. These were clearly the two celebrities who were supposedly involved with Ye Qingwu!

Why were they together?

These perverts!

There was another post about how these two had wanted to increase their popularity by destroying Ye Qingwu's reputation.

The article was written quite convincingly, and it was hard to suspect anything with these photos.

Those gross photos quickly went viral, and there were many who said that these two men were problematic in the first place, and they had joined hands to increase their own popularity by using Ye Qingwu!

"That's really gross right? Two grown men...they're so shameless!"

"Didn't they say they were Ye Qingwu's boyfriends? Why on earth..."

"What has this got to do with Ye Qingwu? These two shameless people are just trying to gain popularity but they actually tried to smear my goddess in doing so!"

"Have you ever seen Ye Qingwu say anything at all? She hasn't said anything because she's innocent!"

There was another uproar online.

More and more people realized that this was just a dirty trick to increase their popularity, and they felt so disgusted by it.

These two men even had an unsavory relationship, and it made them even angrier!

Were they still human for falsely accusing Ye Qingwu like that?

The rumor soon dispelled itself. All the attention was now on attacking those

two shameless male celebrities, and it was hard for their agencies to hold up against the attack of the netizens.

"All trash! Useless things!!"

Somewhere in an entertainment company in the north, a woman was screaming into the phone, "If you can't even settle such a small matter, then why on earth do I even hire you?"

"Don't call me again! Settle this yourselves!"

She flung the phone onto the floor, and the powder on her face was almost shaken off from how much she was trembling in anger.

"This Lin Group is not bad huh, reacting so quickly," the woman smiled coldly. "You even dare to bully my family. Did you think the Sun family is dead? I will make you pay for this! You haven't just offended the Sun family, you've offended me too! HUMPH!"

She had failed this time round, but it didn't mean she was giving up. She was going to attack even harder the next time!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Meanwhile,

Back in Shenghai,

Ye Qingwu and Wang Wei were equally stunned.

It was all settled?

All they did was to drink tea with Jiang Ning at night and had a good night's rest. The next morning, the entire web was filled with comments speaking up for Ye Qingwu and cursing those two men.

All the attacks were now aimed at the two male celebrities, while Ye Qingwu got even more support than ever. Even Lin Group's new product suddenly went up in sales again.

How did Jiang Ning manage to do it?

This...this was simply unbelievable!

Even Wang Wei who had been a manager in this line for many years and did know a trick or two, was very shocked by this.

Other people would use various publicity methods, or spend a lot of money, or use their connections to try to reduce the impact of the matter, but Jiang Ning...

Jiang Ning just settled the root of the problem directly!

It was simple!

Straightforward!

But the most effective!

And Ye Qingwu didn't need to appear nor say a single word.

The rumor just came and went like that.

"Brother Ning you're amazing!" Wang Wei said this sincerely. "I never thought of using something like that to turn everyone's attention away."

Everyone loved a good scandal. Now that two male celebrities had a scandal that involved each other, everyone was sure to watch.

But Wang Wei also knew that even if he had thought of it, he couldn't possibly have carried it out. Kidnapping the two men and making them take those photos without leaving a single trace wasn't something he was capable of

doing.

"You can go ahead and continue singing in peace now," said Jiang Ning. "From now on, I think most people would think twice before trying to make trouble for you."

The last time, Su Mingquan tried to use his power and influence to force Ye Qingwu to sleep with him and nearly ended up losing his life.

This time, someone tried to attack Lin Group by ruining Ye Qingwu's reputation.

Both problems were solved easily, so if anyone still wanted to make trouble for Ye Qingwu, they would have to think about whether they could bear the consequences of doing so.

If someone still didn't learn his lesson, then whoever tried anything would die terribly.

"Thank you," Ye Qingwu smiled.

She knew Jiang Ning interfered with this matter only because Lin Yuzhen had asked him to.

"It's just that I might not sing anymore."

Ye Qingwu had already terminated her contract with Star Entertainment and she hadn't thought about what to do next at all.

She didn't seem to know what else she wanted to do besides sing.

"Why?" asked Jiang Ning. "Did something else happen?"

Lin Yuzhen had told him very specifically that she didn't want anybody to dash Ye Qingwu's dreams and wanted her to keep singing.

"Nah, I've already terminated my contract with the company. I've figured that I can't stand on my own in this industry," explained Ye Qingwu. "I just wanted to sing in peace, but reality doesn't allow me to do so."

There were many parts of the industry that were gray areas even if they weren't completely dark, and that was difficult for her to accept.

She had a voice meant for singing, and not for drinking parties. She also hated how she had to put on a fake smile and give in to big shots just to get more resources from them.

That was really selling herself out.

Jiang Ning knew what she was talking about.

"But Yuzhen likes to hear you sing."

"That's alright. If she wants to hear me sing, I'll sing to her," replied Ye Qingwu.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. Lin Yuzhen clearly didn't mean this. She wanted Ye Qingwu to be able to continue chasing after her dreams.

He sent Ye Qingwu home, then called Wang Wei out.

"Bring me to Qingwu's company," Jiang Ning said directly.

Wang Wei didn't question him.

He knew what Jiang Ning was going to do, and he couldn't stop Jiang Ning from doing what he wanted to do. Besides, Jiang Ning was definitely going to speak up for Ye Qingwu, and Wang Wei didn't like that ungrateful boss either!

Wang Wei drove Jiang Ning to Star Entertainment.

They got out of the car and were stopped by the security guards at the entrance.

"Apologies, but only staff are allowed to enter the building."

The security guards didn't bother even looking at them. Bai Xiaofei had told them that Wang Wei and Ye Qingwu were never allowed into the office again. They had left some things behind but there was no way they could take them away now!

The copyright for all the songs that Ye Qingwu recorded belonged to the company, so even if she found another company, she couldn't sing those songs anymore.

"Move aside!"

Jiang Ning couldn't be bothered to say more. He pushed the guards aside and his imposing presence frightened everyone else away.

Jiang Ning went upstairs with Wang Wei leading the way.

After being in this company for so many years, he had never walked so confidently like this before.

"Big Boss, this way."

Wang Wei brought Jiang Ning directly to Bai Xiaofei's office. Many people saw Wang Wei along the way but nobody dared to greet him.

They all knew that he and Ye Qingwu had already left the company, and anyone who greeted him would probably be fired too.

BAM!

Jiang Ning couldn't even be bothered to knock. He kicked the door open and walked right in.

"Who are you!" Bai Xiaofei was holding a newly signed female artiste in his arms when he heard the loud sound of the door being kicked open. He got a fright, so he let go and his legs trembled, causing the female artiste to fall from his arms and onto the floor, making her yelp in pain.

He saw that it was Wang Wei and a stranger and immediately became furious.

"Wang Wei! You still dare to come back?" Bai Xiaofei roared angrily. "Are you asking to die?"

Wang Wei didn't say anything. He stretched an arm out to show Jiang Ning the way, and Jiang Ning sat down in front of Bai Xiaofei.

"Who are you?" Bai Xiaofei waved his hand and got the female artiste to leave the room. He then stared at Jiang Ning nastily. "You're pretty bold for trying to make trouble in my company!"

"Why, are you here to avenge Ye Qingwu?" He snorted coldly. "Dream on! She's got no future left in the industry! I've talked to everyone already and nobody will sign her on!"

Bai Xiaofei had already sealed Ye Qingwu's path off. After all, Ye Qingwu had already offended those people in the north that nobody wanted to offend, and Ye Qingwu's hit songs' copyrights were all with him, so she had nothing to sing now. Which company would still want her?

Start from scratch? That was easier said than done.

"You're not worthy of my attention," Jiang Ning glanced at Bai Xiaofei. He didn't care for the boss of a tiny company like this.


"You're really boastful, huh!" Bai Xiaofei laughed. "In Shanghai, I'm not some really big shot, but nobody dares to look down on me either. You..."

"\$1 billion."

Before he could finish his sentence, Jiang Ning cut in calmly, "I'm buying this company of yours."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What did you say?" Bai Xiaofei was stunned and there was a ringing in his head.

"You want to buy my company? For \$1 billion?"

If Star Entertainment didn't discover a huge star like Ye Qingwu, it wasn't worth very much. Even if Ye Qingwu was still with them, it was worth a maximum of around \$200 million or so. But Jiang Ning wanted to buy it at \$1 billion!

Was this guy from outside the industry? Or he didn't lack money?

\$1 billion!

"If you're agreeable, then get your legal department to draw up the contract right now. I don't have so much time to waste on you."

Jiang Ning got up and didn't take a second look at Bai Xiaofei. He turned and looked at Wang Wei.

"You get everything done for me. From today onwards, you're the boss of this place. Produce a few more songs for Qingwu, my wife likes her songs."

Jiang Ning then turned and left.

Both Bai Xiaofei and Wang Wei were left in the office and were as speechless as one another.

Wang Wei felt like his face was numb and his ears were ringing. He didn't seem to have heard what Jiang Ning just said, but his words continued to echo in his mind and kept replaying themselves.

Jiang Ning was buying this company?

And Jiang Ning wanted Wang Wei to be the boss so that Lin Yuzhen could continue to hear Ye Qingwu sing, and Lin Yuzhen wanted Ye Qingwu to sing happily?

\$1 billion!

This guy just treated money like it was free.

Bai Xiaofei slapped himself a few times before he pulled himself together and turned to look at Wang Wei. "Who on earth was that?"

"Someone you can't afford to offend," was all Wang Wei said.

Bai Xiaofei took a deep breath. Initially he was a little angry because he didn't

like how Jiang Ning had just insisted on buying the company, as if Bai Xiaofei had to sell it to him.

\$1 billion was a tempting price and it was already way more than he deserved. Besides, it was getting harder and harder to survive this industry. Without enough resources and backing, it was difficult to make it big even if he worked for the rest of his life.

Jiang Ning's casual attitude made him both uncomfortable and indignant.

But after hearing what Wang Wei said, Bai Xiaofei gulped and calmed down immediately.

Since Jiang Ning said he wanted the company, then he was definitely taking the company. If he didn't agree to sell it, then he might not get a single cent in the end!

This man had just offered \$1 billion to buy a company so as to support a singer because he wanted his wife to be able to listen to the songs she liked?

He had never seen anybody spend so lavishly before!

"How...how did Ye Qingwu get to know such a powerful person?"

Bai Xiaofei wasn't stupid. He could tell immediately that this man was probably the one who got Ye Qingwu out of the last two crises.

He was too scary!

"Don't ask so much," Wang Wei took a deep breath. His face was still a little red from excitement. "Mr Bai, just sign the agreement, take the money and retire."

Ye Qingwu was completely stunned when she saw the contract that Wang Wei brought back.

\$1 billion. Jiang Ning didn't even bat an eyelid when he bought this company.

"Brother Ning said that this company is just so that you can sing in peace and sing happily. You don't have to do anything you don't want to."

If Wang Wei didn't know that Jiang Ning was devoted to only Lin Yuzhen, he felt that even Ye Qingwu would have fallen for him.

"He said that if you're unhappy, Yuzhen would be unhappy and he will not allow Yuzhen to be unhappy."

Ye Qingwu burst out laughing.

"Yes yes, I'm already used to how indulgent this fellow is towards his wife."

Ye Qingwu took a deep breath. She was both grateful and touched. Of course she knew that Jiang Ning hadn't just done this because Lin Yuzhen said so, but he also genuinely wanted to help her.

She didn't have any other thoughts. No matter how outstanding Jiang Ning was, he was Lin Yuzhen's husband and she would not have any thoughts about him.

Anyone in this world could hurt Lin Yuzhen, but she was definitely not going to.

Jiang Ning left the hotel, found a teahouse and sat there quietly.

Huang Yuming sat across from him and was leisurely making tea.

DOONG DOONG DOONG.

In no time, someone knocked on the private room's door.

Brother Gou opened the door. The man who walked in had an unfeeling expression on his face, and it seemed rather cold.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Have a seat."

Liu Xiaodao just sat down without going through any formalities.

He wasn't fully recovered, but he could move about quite well.

"What do you want me to do?"

He went straight to the point and didn't want to waste time.

After Jiang Ning visited him in hospital and said those things to him, Liu Xiaodao had made up his mind.

"What needs to be done is your business. I just want one thing," said Jiang Ning calmly. "I want the waters of Shenghai's illegal circle to become as murky as possible."

There was a glint in Liu Xiaodao's eyes.

He knew what Jiang Ning was capable of. This invincible man seemed to carry a naturally terrifying aura around himself.

But Shenghai wasn't that simple.

"I have to remind you," Liu Xiaodao said. "There are many powers at work within Shenghai's illegal circle, and there are tons of highly skilled fighters inside. Never mind the Gao family and Zuo family – just the Su family alone should not be looked down upon."

"Legend has it that a century ago, the head of the Su family started the Qing Sect, and it has very deep roots in Shenghai's illegal circle. Second Master Su, the second son of the Su family, is not easy to deal with!"

Jiang Ning narrowed his eyes and calmly replied, "If it's destroyed too easily, then it's meaningless, isn't it?"

Liu Xiaodao felt his heart stir.

What audacity!

Jiang Ning was really too audacious!

Jiang Ning had said it so nonchalantly, and Liu Xiaodao couldn't see a single trace of wariness on Jiang Ning's face. This fellow clearly didn't have any regard for the Su family.

But after witnessing what Jiang Ning could do, Jiang Ning did indeed have the

right to be this audacious.

"The last time, you let Su Mingquan off, but he's not grateful for that at all," said Liu Xiaodao. "The Su family just thinks that you let him off because Donghai is wary of the Su family."

"They're already preparing to attack you guys secretly."

"Oh that's even better," Jiang Ning laughed.

He liked it when others didn't seem to fear death and came knocking on his door. If they didn't come knocking, he'd have nobody to play with.

Liu Xiaodao knew from Jiang Ning's tone of voice that Jiang Ning was ready to make his move and there was no turning back. On top of that, Jiang Ning was determined to make this happen.

He picked up the teacup that Jiang Ning offered him and drank it down in one shot.

Then he got up. "Wait for my news!"

He then opened the door, carefully looked around to make sure nobody was following him, then disappeared into the distance.

"Can we trust this guy?"

Huang Yuming had investigated Liu Xiaodao fairly thoroughly already. But this sort of person was very hard to grasp.

Jiang Ning looked at the empty teacup and replied, "I've never trusted him, but that's part of my plan too."

Jiang Ning was shockingly good at understanding and reading people's hearts.

This part was already within his plans. He looked ahead three steps before taking one step. Even if Liu Xiaodao had any other ideas, Jiang Ning would have already expected it.

The more tricks Liu Xiaodao tried, the happier Jiang Ning was.

Jiang Ning was most afraid that Liu Xiaodao would have no ideas of his own and would follow everything Jiang Ning told him to do. But clearly that was not the type of person Liu Xiaodao was.

Soon.

The storm within Shenghai's illegal circle was coming soon.

When that happened, blood was going to flow like a river. How many people were going to disappear from the face of the earth?

At least those who deserved it should disappear.

"Get ready, it's time to have fun," said Jiang Ning calmly as he picked up a teacup.

After leaving the teahouse, Liu Xiaodao got into a black car, drove it to a deserted area, then switched to a gray car before removing his cap and sunglasses.

His eyes were filled with coldness and malice.

He had confirmed that his younger sister had been raped and beaten to death by Su Mingquan after all.

He was definitely going to take revenge for that.

And he wasn't going to just help Jiang Ning to get everything done. Why should he?

He hated Jiang Ning too. He didn't trust anyone easily and he was definitely not going to do anything for anyone. If Jiang Ning wasn't too powerful for him, Liu Xiaodao would have killed him by now.

But even if he couldn't kill Jiang Ning, someone out there someday would be able to!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

At the Su house.

After Su Mingquan had been taught a lesson by Jiang Ning and nearly died, Su Bowen gave orders to not let Su Mingquan go out of the house at all.

Su Mingquan was going crazy at home.

It was so hard for a wastrel like Su Mingquan to endure staying at home without alcohol and women.

He tossed and turned on the bed and felt like his body was on fire.

"I can't stand it anymore!"

If this went on, he felt as though his lower half was going to explode.

Su Mingquan immediately took his phone out and made a call.

"Come and pick me from the back door, don't alert anyone!"

Su Mingquan got up, got changed and walked to the living room. He didn't see Su Bowen, so he checked with the butler and learnt that his father had to attend a dinner and wasn't coming home early, so he was relieved.

"Ladies, I'm coming for you!"

Su Mingquan secretly ran to the back door without anyone noticing him. He quickly went out and saw a gray car already waiting for him.

He quickly got into the car. Liu Xiaodao had been waiting for quite a while already.

"Go to Luxury!"

That was the nightclub he frequented because it offered many ways of having fun that suited his tastes.

He was about to die from holding his desires in.

"Got it," replied Liu Xiaodao in a low voice as he glanced into the rear mirror.

Su Mingquan didn't see the glint of hatred that flashed in those eyes.

At Luxury Nightclub.

This nightclub was pretty famous in Shenghai, and it was one of the top three clubs in this nightclub district.

More importantly, the person behind this nightclub was Su Mingquan's second brother, the terrifying man known in Shenghai as Second Master Su.

All the cars parked at the club's entrance were luxury cars. Anything that cost less than a million didn't have the right to park here.

There were many well dressed ladies who would take their phones out to take photos as they walked past, dreaming of the day they might meet their prince charming on a white horse here.

But they never realized that the princes here never rode horses, and only rode women.

DOOMCH DOOMCH DOOMCH...

Su Mingquan got out of the car and walked in with Liu Xiaodao. The moment they walked in, the deafening music hit their ears.

"Young Master Mingquan!"

The manager's eyes were very sharp and spotted Su Mingquan immediately.

"Don't tell my brother," Su Mingquan said immediately. "And don't tell my dad."

"Don't worry," the manager smiled. He knew what sort of person Su Mingquan was. "Your usual room?"

Su Mingquan nodded with a pleased expression.

He whispered to the manager, "Any new girls lately? I'm done with those small time celebrities and I want some pure and innocent ones."

"Of course," the manager nodded. "I've gotten all the girls ready for you. Go take a seat in your room, I'll send the girls over in a minute."

Su Mingquan took Liu Xiaodao to his usual private room and Su Mingquan was like he had been released from a cage. He flung his jacket to one side, undid his collar and started cursing on the sofa.

"I'm going to fucking die from being cooped up at home! Xiaodao! Get the drinks!"

He shouted loudly, "Hurry up! Why are you so damned slow!"

Liu Xiaodao didn't say anything. He took one of Su Mingquan's favorites out from the wine cupboard and poured a glass for him. Then he stood to one side and didn't say anything.

To Su Mingquan, Liu Xiaodao was merely a dog for him to command about. He had no right to have fun along with Su Mingquan.

"Why aren't the girls here yet?"

Su Mingquan was getting impatient. He felt a fire burning in him and it was going to consume him soon.

After downing two glasses, he was ready to spew fire.

"Go and chase the manager!"

He didn't even look at Liu Xiaodao and started to pour himself another glass.

"Got it," Liu Xiaodao nodded, then walked over. "Young Master, I'll pour it for you."

Su Mingquan scoffed and took his hands back as he leaned back into the sofa. He still loved the feeling of being served.

PFFFT.

Suddenly his expression changed and he wanted to turn around, but he felt his strength draining away.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

He looked down with disbelief in his eyes at the tip of the blade sticking out from his own chest.

He couldn't believe it. Liu Xiaodao dared to kill him?!

Liu Xiaodao was still behind the sofa and his two hands were still holding onto the knife. He had stabbed it through the sofa and right through Su Mingquan's heart.

"You...you..."

Su Mingquan's lips were trembling. He couldn't see Liu Xiaodao's expression, but the knife that he used to stab Su Mingquan was still trembling.

"Did you think I would really let you off for killing my sister?" Liu Xiaodao's devil like voice reached Su Mingquan's ears. "Go to hell! I want everyone in the Su family to die!"

PFFFT!

Su Mingquan spat another mouthful of blood. He opened his mouth to speak but he had no more strength.

Liu Xiaodao let go of the knife and left it where it was. He walked to the front of the sofa and watched Su Mingquan die as he took a wet tissue to wipe away the blood on his hands.

He then scoffed and walked out of the room.

He had just left the room when he saw the manager bring a few ladies over, and he blocked their way.

"Why so slow? Young Master can't wait anymore."

"Yes, yes, these ladies are for him, we're going in now."

"These girls?"

Liu Xiaodao frowned. "Don't you know Young Master's taste? Get a few wilder ones. Young Master has been holding it in for a long time and needs to get it all out. These girls look like they might dampen his spirits."

"But...Young Master Mingquan said he wanted the pure and innocent type earlier."

"You don't believe me? You can go in and try."

The manager didn't dare to say anymore. Liu Xiaodao had followed Su Mingquan for so many years and knew him better than the manager. So the manager sent the girls away and went to call others instead.

"Young Master has made an appointment with Young Master Sizhe, so find a few girls for him as well. I'm going to pick him up, you make arrangements, ok?"

Liu Xiaodao left after that. The manager quickly got to work and went to make arrangements since the youngest son of the Zuo family was coming too.

The youngest son of the Zuo family, Zuo Sizhe, was just as wild and playful as Su Mingquan. They were a familiar face in every nightclub in Shenghai, and they were well known to be their most difficult patrons.

On the surface, the Zuo family and the Su family looked like they got along well and even their children hung out together. But the two families never stopped challenging each other.

They had to compete even when they went to each other's nightclubs to play. Since Zuo Sizhe was coming to a nightclub that the Su family ran, then the nightclub couldn't let Su Mingquan look bad.

The manager quickly found a few girls who were really good with customers and brought them to the room.

He knocked on the door. "Young Master, I've brought the girls over."

The manager then pushed the door open with a big smile. The lights inside the room were off, but he could roughly see that Su Mingquan was on the sofa and the smell of alcohol was quite strong.

"Make sure you make Young Master Mingquan happy, you hear me?"

All the girls quickly surrounded Su Mingquan upon their manager's orders.

One of the women stretched a hand out and touched something wet. She thought it was alcohol, but when she sniffed her fingers, she was shocked that it smelled like blood. She looked more carefully in the dim light and realized that there was a blade sticking out from Su Mingquan's chest and started screaming in fright.

"AHHH!!! Young Master Mingquan is dead! He's dead!!"


PAK!

The manager shuddered and immediately flipped the light switch. He

immediately saw Su Mingquan sitting on the sofa with his eyes wide open and already dead!

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

"AHHH!!!!"

All the women started shrieking in fright and ran out of the room.

The manager was even more shaken.

Su Mingquan was dead!

The third son of the Su family had died in this nightclub. As the manager of the club, he was doomed.

"Young Master Mingquan! Young Master Mingquan!"

He shouted loudly several times, but of course Su Mingquan didn't respond. He was already rapidly growing cold.

That knife was still stuck through the sofa and through Su Mingquan's heart, effectively attaching him to the sofa. It was a horrifying sight.

The entire club became chaotic.

The screams and shrieks never stopped.

After that the security guards, emergency rescue workers, the owner of the club, and various other people came running over in a panic.

At the same time,

Liu Xiaodao had left Luxury Nightclub a long time ago.

He was driving towards the Zuo house now.

Su Mingquan's phone was on the passenger seat next to him. He had found Zuo Sizhe's number and sent him a message instead of calling.

He was sure that Zuo Sizhe would definitely leave the house without a bodyguard once he saw this message.

Meanwhile,

In the Zuo house,

Zuo Sizhe was the youngest and only son of a family with seven sisters. He was only nineteen, but he was already famous in Shanghai's night scene.

He and Su Mingquan were famous as nightclub regulars. They loved to play and dared to do anything. They competed on every possible thing and had

actually become friends.

Even though the Zuo family and the Su family were rivals, it never affected their hobby of looking for women together.

The last time, Zuo Sizhe had called Su Mingquan out. They were both in a private room and tried to put their manhood to the test. In the end Zuo Sizhe lost in experience and came earlier than Su Mingquan.

Su Mingquan had laughed at him for months, and Zuo Sizhe was always indignant about it.

After seeing the message from Su Mingquan, Zuo Sizhe was suddenly no longer feeling bored.

"Humph, I've practiced for so long and I'm sure I'm unbeatable now. Did you think you'd still get so lucky?"

Zuo Sizhe was fair faced and very skinny, and he was only around 5'8. But because he was constantly found atop a woman, the color of his skin was a little sallow and he didn't look energetic.

But once he thought about how he was going to teach Su Mingquan a lesson, Zuo Sizhe immediately got changed and was ready to go out.

"Young Master Sizhe, Master has already given instructions for you to stay home."

"Get lost."

Zuo Sizhe couldn't be bothered with them. His face fell when he saw the men following him. "Who dares to follow me? Don't blame me for getting nasty!"

The men looked at one another, then looked at Zuo Sizhe as if they were in a difficult position.

"I'm just going to grab some drinks with Su Mingquan, so what could possibly happen? All of you, stay here!"

He then left the house and saw the car that Su Mingquan always took. Zuo Sizhe immediately waved at the car.

Liu Xiaodao stopped the car near to him, then quickly opened the door for him and said politely, "Young Master Sizhe, Young Master Mingquan told me to pick you up."

"Where's he?"

"He's already drinking at Luxury. He was afraid that you wouldn't turn up, so he got me to pick you up."

Zuo Sizhe laughed coldly. Afraid that he wouldn't turn up?

That had to be a joke!

He got into the car. "Let's go!"

"Got it."

There was a glint in Liu Xiaodao's eye as he quickly got back into the driver's seat. He started up the car and drove away, but they weren't headed for Luxury Nightclub.

Luxury Nightclub was in chaos.

By the time the doctor came, there was nothing he could do.

Su Mingquan had been stabbed directly through the heart and was already dead by the time the manager found him.

Su Mingchang had dropped everything and rushed over the minute he heard the news.

His own younger brother had died on his own territory. It was driving him nuts!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

PAK!

He slapped the manager hard across the face and roared, "What is going on? How did my younger brother die! Say it now!"

Su Mingchang was furious and nobody dared to even breathe too loudly.

The third son of the Su family had died, and he had actually died in a club that the Su family owned. This was like throwing a bomb into the deep water and causing huge waves to splash everywhere.

"I...I really don't know!"

The nightclub manager was kneeling on the floor and trembling violently. His entire face was drained of color.

"Young Master Mingquan said he couldn't stand being cooped up at home anymore and wanted to have some fun, so I went to get everything arranged for him...I didn't expect...I didn't expect him to be murdered!"

He was about to cry soon when he suddenly remembered something. "Liu Xiaodao! Young Master Mingquan came with only Liu Xiaodao, then he disappeared!"

Su Mingchang's expression darkened and unleashed a murderous air.

"Watch the people and make sure they say everything they know!" he roared. Then he turned to his subordinates and instructed, "Get that Liu Xiaodao here!"

"Yes boss!"

The death of the youngest son of the Su family shook up all of Shenghai in an instant.

Nobody thought that anyone would dare to kill someone from the Su family within Shenghai.

Everyone knew how frightening those three powerful families were.

In no time, word spread quickly and everyone was now looking for Liu Xiaodao. The one who was most like to have murdered Su Mingquan was Liu Xiaodao.

And now, Liu Xiaodao was nowhere to be found.

Back in the Su house.

Su Bowen's face was all red as he angrily slapped Su Mingchang.

"That was your younger brother! He died in your territory and you actually dare to come home?!" he roared and his entire body was shaking from anger.

Su Mingchang clenched his teeth. "I'm going to get that Liu Xiaodao back and hack him to pieces!"

But what was the use of doing that?

Su Mingquan was already dead!

"What is going on!" Su Bowen's expression was grim. He had a bad feeling that things weren't as simple as it seemed.

Everyone knew how terrifying the three powerful families of Shenghai were. So no matter how much they hated the Su family, nobody would have dared to just kill Su Mingquan like this.

Did he not fear that the Su family would take revenge?

"Liu Xiaodao said that Mingquan had asked Zuo Sizhe out for drinks and he went to pick Zuo Sizhe up..."

"What did you say?" Su Bowen's eyes narrowed violently. "The Zuo family?"

"I told Su Mingquan many times before not to walk too closely with the people from the Zuo family! He refused to listen to me!"

Su Mingchang's expression changed. "Dad, are you saying the Zuo family did this?"

"The Su family is about to make an advancement, so the Zuo family and the Gao family aren't too happy about that. The Zuo family in particular, has been secretly fighting with us for a long time now, and there's a feud between us now."

Su Bowen took a deep breath. He was really furious.

He didn't want Su Mingquan to leave the house because he was afraid that the Zuo family would really attack his son. This was the same reason why the Zuo family didn't let Zuo Sizhe leave the house either.

If Su Mingquan's death had something to do with Zuo Sizhe, then it was definitely related to the Zuo family.

"Humph! If the Zuo family is behind this, I'm going to raze them to the ground!" said Su Changming coldly.

"Investigate this! And find that Liu Xiaodao! We must find him!" Su Bowen instructed coldly.

Meanwhile,

Jiang Ning sat in the balcony and looked expressionlessly at Shenghai shrouded by the night.

"Big Boss, Su Mingquan is dead." Huang Yuming was by his side and continued to check his information sources. "Liu Xiaodao has taken Zuo Sizhe away, so I don't think this Zuo Sizhe will live long either."

"The illegal circle of Shenghai is going to be one huge mess soon."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The three powerful families of Shenghai were both imposing and domineering.

They had been in Shenghai for so many years and nobody seemed able to move them at all. On the legal side, they owned several companies in all sorts of industries. At the same time, they were reliant on their tremendous influence in the illegal circle.

All of this was difficult for most people to imagine.

It was really not easy to cause chaos in this huge lake.

Su Mingquan deserved to die but Jiang Ning didn't kill him because one, this fellow wasn't worthy to die at Jiang Ning's hands, and two, his time wasn't up yet.

But now, his time had come.

"Big Boss, do you think this fire will reach us?" Huang Yuming figured that this fire would definitely reach them, but he didn't know in what way.

Liu Xiaodao was clearly an unpredictable figure.

"We just need to wait quietly." Jiang Ning stuck a hand out and Huang Yuming passed him a cigarette. "There are many highly skilled fighters in Shenghai. I believe the wolves would be very excited about that."

The night was quite cold.

Jiang Ning wasn't wearing much, but he stood straight and steadily at the balcony like a javelin.

The Su family was already a mess.

Su Bowen looked wordlessly at his cold and stiff son. His expression was so dark that he looked like he might eat someone up.

"Dad!" The eldest son, Su Mingwei, had returned.

He was discussing a very important project to the Su family in the north.

But once he heard that Su Mingquan had been murdered, he came back immediately.

The moment he rushed into the main hall, he saw Su Mingquan's dead body, and tears immediately came to Su Mingwei's eyes.

"Who did this!?" Su Mingwei roared angrily.

Nobody dared to say anything.

"Who on earth killed my younger brother?!"

The Su family had three sons – the eldest, Su Mingwei, was in charge of the family's legal businesses, while the second son, Su Mingchang, was infamous as Second Master Su in Shenghai's illegal circle, and kept a good hand of highly skilled fighters with him.

As for the youngest son, Su Mingquan, nobody in the family expected him to do anything. As the youngest son, he only needed to have fun and wasn't required to do anything else.

But now Su Mingquan was dead!

And he had even died within their own territory!

This wasn't just a challenge to the Su family. This was also an insult.

"The Zuo family," Su Bowen suddenly spoke up and looked at Su Mingwei. "They're currently the biggest suspect."

"I'm going to destroy them!" Su Mingwei roared angrily. "Where's Mingchang? What the hell was he doing? How did Mingquan die within his own territory?!"

All these years, nobody had ever dared to do such a thing to the Su family.

Even when the Zuo family and Gao family were fighting with them, things never turned out like this. Now someone had actually murdered a member of the Su family, so clearly they were unhappy about the Su family getting ahead of them in the north.

"I'm waiting for the results of Mingchang's investigation," Su Bowen's tone of voice was grim and angry, but he wasn't rash.

This whole thing was too strange. It was hard to blame it on the Zuo family too, actually. It was now a very important time for the Su family, so all information was guarded well and the Zuo family and Gao family couldn't have known that the Su family was getting ahead of them.

So why would they suddenly make a move? And why would they kill Su Mingquan, a family member that posed no threat to them?

"The moment we confirm it's the Zuo family, I'm going to make sure they pay for this!" Su Mingwei declared loudly.

At the same time,

In the Zuo house!

The air in this house was equally stifling and it was difficult to breathe.

As they looked upon Zuo Sizhe's dead body, the anger rising from the Zuo family was enough to burn all of Shenghai down.

BAM!

The head of the Zuo family, Zuo Chunqiu, slammed a palm on the table and broke the table into pieces.

"Have you caught him yet?" His voice was trembling from his tremendous fury. He never thought that his youngest son would be murdered.

"We are tracking him down. We're watching all the exit points of Shenghai closely, he won't get out of this city," his subordinate reported coldly. "That man, is from the Su family."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Zuo Chunqiu narrowed his eyes. "The Su family!"

"Master, the third son of the Su family has also been murdered. The Su family is also tracking down the murderer, and apparently the murderer is also this Liu Xiaodao. There's something fishy about this matter."

"Fishy?" Zuo Chunqiu laughed coldly. "I don't care if it's fishy or not, and I don't care what tricks the Su family is pulling! The one who killed my son is from the Su family and we have to settle this feud with them!"

"He tried to use his useless son in exchange for my son's life? Su Bowen can dream on!"

Zuo Chunqiu knew that the Su family was hoping to get ahead of the Zuo family and Gao family, so they kept looking up the powerful families of the north to seek better protection.

Did Su Bowen think he could hide this information?

"Make sure we catch him first. Don't let the Su family silence him first."

"Got it! Master, I will catch this man and investigate thoroughly!"

The subordinate clasped his hands and ran out immediately.

Zuo Chunqiu stood there and looked down at Zuo Sizhe's dead body. He looked up slightly and his eyes were emanating fury and murder.

"Couldn't stand not doing anything? Su Bowen, our families were rivals since a century ago, and till today, you're still indignant, right?" Zuo Chunqiu laughed coldly. "Since you've made your move, then don't blame me for getting nasty!"

He didn't believe anything the Su family said. So what if Su Mingquan was dead? He was a useless son and didn't affect the Su family at all.

He actually used his own useless son to create trouble?

Su Bowen was really generous!

Out of the three powerful families of Shenghai, only one would be able to stand at the peak and control all of Shenghai. All three families had been preparing for this for many years and had worked hard towards this for many years now. Looks like it was time for a showdown!

The whole of Shenghai was now very tense.

The youngest sons of both the Su family and the Zuo family had been

murdered on the same night!

This made many people worry that a storm would soon run through Shenghai.

Everyone was trying hunt Liu Xiaodao down. Once they found him and found out who the mastermind was, a huge battle was going to ensue for sure.

Both the Su family and the Zuo family had started to scale down their operations because they wanted to prepare for war. Their coordinated movements made everyone frightened because it seemed like there was no place for negotiation at all.

It was getting more and more confusing.

The air was tense and anything could happen anytime.

Meanwhile, Jiang Ning was still calm, unhurried and relaxed.

"The Su family and Zuo family don't even want to talk or ask each other anything. They've both sent out a lot of men to hunt Liu Xiaodao down. Once they capture him, regardless of who Liu Xiaodao claims as the mastermind, it's going to raise a riot for sure."

Huang Yuming continued, "Big Boss, I think this Liu Xiaodao might claim to be from Donghai."

That was Huang Yuming's guess. He guessed that Liu Xiaodao was going to lead the fire to Jiang Ning so that Shenghai would become even messier.

"Not necessarily so," Jiang Ning replied calmly. "Didn't you say that the Su family and Zuo family have been fighting to be the top family of Shenghai for a long time and are just missing a fuse to make them fight each other?"

"So even without this matter, they would have made their move sooner or later. Besides, the two boys who died are the most useless members of their family. You think they really care?"

That was just an excuse to attack each other!

"Big Boss, so you mean this fire isn't going to burn all the way to us?"

"Right now, the one who's panicking the most is the Gao family," said Jiang Ning.

The night in Shenghai seemed to be missing the usual bright lights and active night life it used to have.

Everything was now shrouded in a murderous air.

It was as if even the air might be able to kill you, and started feeling very chilly.

Jiang Ning was on a high floor as he looked far out into the distance. There was a smile on his lips, as if he could see Liu Xiaodao.

Liu Xiaodao was now on the run!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Over there! Get him!"

"Run after him!"

"Don't let him get away!"

A huge group of men were chasing Liu Xiaodao down the street like he was a rat, and didn't even give him time to catch his breath.

He didn't expect the Zuo family and Su family to just hunt him down without even speaking to one another first.

He thought of finding a chance to leave Shenghai while the two families were fighting and head for Donghai, so that everything could be blamed on Jiang Ning.

Once he made it to Donghai and attracted the men from both families, then Jiang Ning would have to deal with them even if he didn't want to.

But the two families didn't talk to one another and didn't seem like they even wanted to talk at all.

All they wanted to do was to catch him!

Huff! Puff!

Liu Xiaodao ran so fast he nearly couldn't catch his breath. His face was all red and he was panting heavily.

There were too many people after him!

He didn't even know whether this group was from the Su family or the Zuo family anymore.

He only knew that he was dead either way.

"Jiang Ning...did you think I would trust you?" Liu Xiaodao smiled coldly. "You just want to make use of me!"

"But even if I die, I'm going to drag you down with me!"

He took a deep breath and could hear the sound of footsteps. He couldn't think about anything else now and quickly made a run for it.

PAK.

Liu Xiaodao accidentally kicked into a wooden board and it made a bright

cracking sound. Many men turned in his direction and there was a scary gleam in their eyes like they were wild beasts hunting in the night.

"He's over there!"

"Chase after him!"

"Surround him from the other side, don't let him get away!"

The men started surrounding Liu Xiaodao from various directions and Liu Xiaodao was going to be trapped soon.

But he could only just keep running like a mad man.

As long as he could get to the pier and hop onto a boat, he could escape!

PAK!

Suddenly, a tiny rock hit Liu Xiaodao's calf hard.

"Ah!" He howled in pain as he immediately lost his balance and fell to the ground. His calf was already bleeding.

Liu Xiaodao clutched his leg and howled in pain.

DADADA!

All the men came rushing over in no time.

They soon surrounded Liu Xiaodao.

The leader of the men was nearly fifty with short hair and looked very fearsome.

He wasn't of large build, and was actually on the short side. But the terrifying air around him made sure that nobody dared to look down on him.

"Trying to run?" Zuo Tian narrowed his eyes and there was another tiny rock in his hand. He laughed coldly, "And where do you think you're running off to?"

Liu Xiaodao was filled with terror and tried to move backwards, but there was nowhere for him to move to.

He knew who this man was. This was the terrifying man who was second in command to the head of the Zuo family – Zuo Tian!

He was a highly skilled fighter who was nearly at grandmaster stage!

Why was he the one coming after him?

"You...I didn't expect it to be you!"

Liu Xiaodao started laughing loudly like he had gone mad. "It's really my honor to be hunted down by you!"

He knew he couldn't away for sure.

Even if he grew a few more arms and legs, there was no way Zuo Tian was going to let him escape from Shenghai.

Besides, the Zuo family had already planted their subordinates at every entry and exit point of Shenghai, so there was no way he could leave this city.

"How dare you kill one of the Zuo family members! You're really bold!" Zuo Tian roared loudly. His voice was like thunder and it echoed violently in Liu Xiaodao's ears, making his face pale instantly.

Swoosh!

He flicked his fingers and another tiny rock hit Liu Xiaodao's other leg, making it bleed profusely.

"AH!" Liu Xiaodao yelped. He couldn't use his legs anymore. He was doomed for sure.

"Take him away!" Zuo Tian scoffed and gave orders. His men immediately went forward to carry Liu Xiaodao off.

"And since when was it your right to take someone from the Su family away?" another voice rang out, followed by several footsteps. The Zuo family's men were now surrounded by another group of men.



Rate the Translation to Get 7 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Zuo Tian looked up and snorted. "Can't believe you're here too."

"This Liu Xiaodao killed Zuo Sizhe, so what's wrong in me taking him away?"

He glared at the figure that walked out of the shadows and wasn't polite at all. "Or do you mean to say that this fellow took orders from the Su family? So you want to bring him back to silence him?"

The men from the Zuo family immediately surrounded Liu Xiaodao to prevent the men from the Su family from killing him.

"Humph, Liu Xiaodao murdered Su Mingquan and betrayed the Su family! This deserves death, so of course I'm going to bring him back and interrogate him!"

Su Bowu walked out. His presence was no weaker than Zuo Tian's.

Both of them were fighting over Liu Xiaodao.

Swooooosh...

Suddenly the two families were now ready to fight one another and the air became very tense. If one person made a move first, a fierce battle would ensue.

"The Zuo family is definitely taking Liu Xiaodao away," Zuo Tian declared. "If the Su family doesn't want us to misunderstand the situation, then you'd better move aside."

If the Su family wanted to take Liu Xiaodao away, that meant that they were guilty and things would become very different then.

"There's no misunderstanding," Su Bowu shook his head. "Zuo Sizhe's death has nothing to do with the Su family."

"But you said that Liu Xiaodao is one of the Su family's men, and now this murder has nothing to do with the Su family? If it has nothing to do with the Su family, then what has Liu Xiaodao got to do with your family?"

"He killed Su Mingquan!"

The two old men glared at each other coldly. The murderous smell in the air became colder and colder.

Liu Xiaodao smiled coldly as he watched the two men argue.

He knew that he was definitely going to die, but if he managed to make the most highly skilled fighters of these two powerful families fight each other,

then he would die without regrets.

"Men! Bring Liu Xiaodao back to the Zuo house!"

"Men! Whoever dares to snatch Liu Xiudao from us will die!"

The air was so tense now.

Both sides were ready to attack anytime.

As long as either Zuo Tian or Su Bowu gave the command, they would all attack.

Zuo Tian and Su Bowu looked at each other for ten seconds, then Zuo Tian suddenly burst out laughing.

"Since both of us are so bent on taking Liu Xiaodao back and we both want to know who the mastermind behind him is, then let's interrogate him together right here," Zuo Tian said with a cold smile. "Since you say that the Su family is innocent, then surely you wouldn't be afraid to do this, right?"

Su Bowu scoffed. "I've got nothing to be afraid of. You'd better pray hard that this has nothing to do with the Zuo family, otherwise I'm going to raze the Zuo family to the ground even if I die!"

Neither side hid their intention to kill each other.

Neither side wanted to give in but both sides wanted to take Liu Xiaodao. But there was only one Liu Xiaodao and they couldn't take just half of him back.

The Zuo family suspected that the Su family had ordered Liu Xiaodao to kill Zuo Sizhe, while the Su family suspected that the Zuo family had bribed Liu Xiaodao into killing Su Mingquan.

Both sides suspected each other and refused to trust the other party, so there was no way they were going to let the other party take Liu Xiaodao away.

DADADA!

Both sides quickly stood in two rows and stared closely at the other side in case they tried anything funny.

With highly skilled fighters like Zuo Tian and Su Bowu around, the rest dared not be rash.

"You want to ask first? Or I'll ask first?" Zuo Tian threw Su Bowu a glance and scoffed.

"Since you caught him first, you can ask first," replied Su Bowu with a cold smile.

Zuo Tian walked to Liu Xiaodao and looked down at him. His eyes were like an eagle staring at its prey, and Liu Xiaodao felt his heart pounding wildly.

He forced a smile out and tried not to feel afraid. He was going to die either way, and you couldn't find another man in Shenghai who was able to kill the sons of both the Zuo family and Su family!

"You want to know who the mastermind is?" Liu Xiaodao clenched his teeth. "Did you think I would betray the person behind me easily? L...AHH!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Before he could finish his sentence, Zuo Tian stepped on one of Liu Xiaodao's bleeding legs.

His howls pierced the sky.

He sounded like a vengeful ghost in the middle of the night, sending chills down everyone's spine.

"Ahhhhh..."

Zuo Tian didn't let go and continued to press against Liu Xiaodao's leg. He was going to crush Liu Xiaodao's leg soon.

Liu Xiaodao was shaking all over but he couldn't get his leg out. Sweat started to rain down his forehead.

He started breathing very quickly and his face was all red. The pain made him feel like every pore on his body was open.

"I'll ask and you'll answer," Zuo Tian ordered curtly. "If you dare to lie to me, I'll crush your bones one at a time!"

These words were enough to send one into a panic.

If one got his bones crushed one by one, how painful would that be?

Liu Xiaodao didn't even dare to imagine it.

"Kill me!" he roared. "Since you can, just kill me! Kill me!"

CRAAACK.

Zuo Tian suddenly exerted some force and there was a terrible cracking sound as Liu Xiaodao's left calf was flattened on the spot. The sound of the bones cracking made everyone stiffen immediately.

"AHHH!!!" A bloodcurdling scream filled the night once more.

Zuo Tian never hesitated to do what he said he would.

"I'll talk...I'll talk!"

Liu Xiaodao couldn't endure this.

He clutched his own leg and the veins on his neck were popping out.

He wanted to hang on for a while so that these men would believe the name he

was going to tell them.

But now he really couldn't take it anymore. He couldn't endure this sort of pain.

"Say it! Who got you to kill Zuo Sizhe!" yelled Zuo Tian.

"It's...it's Jiang Ning from Donghai!"

CRACCK!

Liu Xiaodao just finished his sentence, and Zuo Tian crushed Liu Xiaodao's right calf with another foot.

Liu Xiaodao convulsed violently and nearly fainted.

He was telling the truth!

It was all true!

Jiang Ning was the one who told him to make the illegal circle of Shenghai as murky as possible!

"You're lying," Zuo Tian narrowed his eyes and glanced at Su Bowu. "Is it the Su family?"

"No it's not the Su family.."

Liu Xiaodao was very alert now. He wished he could faint, but the terrible pain didn't give him the chance to faint at all.

"It's Jiang Ning! Jiang Ning from Donghai!"

He was telling the truth!

"You still dare to lie to me?" Zuo Tian shook his head instead. "I don't like this answer of yours."

Liu Xiaodao's head suddenly started ringing.

He suddenly understood that there was an answer that Zuo Tian was looking for. As long as he couldn't give Zuo Tian the answer he wanted to hear, then he was deemed to be lying.

Liu Xiaodao never thought that things would turn out this way.

He had killed Su Mingquan and Zuo Sizhe because he wanted the families to kill each other, and eventually direct their fury towards Jiang Ning.

He wanted all three parties to suffer tremendous losses!

But this wasn't what he expected at all.

Some part of him even realized that Jiang Ning must have known that he would have this thought.

"No, no, it's not the Su family..."

Liu Xiaodao looked despairingly at Su Bowu. If he said it was the Su family, then he would be tortured so badly!

"If it's not the Su family, then what, the Zuo family?!" asked Zuo Tian.

"No, no it's not the Zuo family..." Liu Xiaodao was very weak as he shook his head. His face was drained of all color.

He was really in despair now.

He thought he could secretly set a trap for Jiang Ning, but this entire thing was within Jiang Ning's expectations, while it wasn't within his own.

He wasn't experienced enough to think of something like that.

"Is it the Zuo family or not? You'd better make yourself clear!" Su Bowu spoke up.

He glared at Liu Xiaodao, "Tell me! Who made you betray the Su family and kill Su Mingquan?"

Liu Xiaodao laughed coldly and looked at the two highly skilled fighters with great despair in his eyes.

"It's the Zuo family! It IS the Zuo family!" he suddenly started shouting like he had gone mad.

If he couldn't trap Jiang Ning, then he was going to make the Su family and Zuo family kill each other.

"It's the Zuo family!" he shouted. "Zuo Sizhe promised to pay me \$10 million if I killed Su Mingquan but he lied to me and I ended up killing Zuo Sizhe as well!"

This story made sense. Or at least that's what Liu Xiaodao thought.

Just kill each other now!

Even if he had to die, he wanted the Su family and Zuo family to go down to hell with him.

"I don't like your answer."

But Su Bowu answered him like this.

WOOOONG...

Liu Xiaodao felt his head spin. He couldn't understand what these two highly skilled fighters wanted out of him anymore.

CRAAAACK!

Zuo Tian stepped on Liu Xiaodao's thigh and it was followed by the sound of bones cracking. One could even see the bone itself sticking out from the flesh!

"Oooooohhh..."

Liu Xiaodao collapsed onto the ground and there was blood everywhere.

He looked at Zuo Tian, then at Su Bowu. The fear and anger in his eyes slowly faded...

They were replaced with despair.

"It's...it's the Gao family!"

Liu Xiaodao finally understood what answer the two families wanted out of him.

They didn't care about this Jiang Ning in Donghai, and they didn't even care if Liu Xiaodao was the killer they were looking for.

In fact, it didn't really matter that Su Mingquan and Zuo Sizhe had died. These two boys were of very little use to these two powerful families.

But they could use their deaths to attack the Gao family, and the two families could even combine forces to destroy the Gao family and get rid of one of their competitors. That would make Su Mingquan and Zuo Sizhe's deaths worth it!

Once the Gao family was gone, then the fight would only be between the Su family and the Zuo family!

Liu Xiaodao finally realized this. He lay on the ground and murmured, "It's the Gao family...they bribed me into killing both Su Mingquan...and Zuo Sizhe."

"Humph! The Gao family!" Zuo Tian declared loudly, "Only one family can remain standing!"

"The Gao family will use their life to pay for killing one of the Su's!" declared Su Bowu equally coldly.

Liu Xiaodao only understood at this moment before dying that Jiang Ning meant it when he said that he never thought of letting Liu Xiaodao off.

All of this was within Jiang Ning's expectations, including how Liu Xiaodao would attempt to set a trap for him and try to push the blame to Donghai... Jiang Ning knew all of this.

The voices around him grew softer and softer. All Liu Xiaodao knew was that the illegal circle of Shenghai was going to be a mess soon, but all of this had nothing to do with him anymore.

.....

Liu Xiaodao had died.

Everybody at the scene, nearly a hundred of them, had heard for themselves that it was the Gao family that bribed him into killing both Su Mingquan and Zuo Sizhe!

The Gao family was one of the three powerful families of Shenghai.

In no time, both the Su family and Zuo family sent word out.

"Since the Gao family killed one of the Su family members, that's a challenge and an insult to the Su family that deserves death! Either the Gao family dies or the Su family dies!"

"The Gao family is too audacious for killing one of the Zuo family members! Did they think the Zuo family has nobody left to take revenge?"

This was the spark that set off the battle!

Both families were so well coordinated, it surprised everyone.

Nobody expected things to turn out this way.

The one who got Liu Xiaodao to commit those murders actually turned out to be the Gao family.

This was challenging the other two powerful families at the same time!

The two powerful families soon made their move. Their legal businesses started to launch massive attacks against the Gao family, while their men in the illegal circles also started to become violent towards the Gao family's territory.

There was no warning at all and they suddenly launched their attacks at the same time. The Gao family wasn't able to fend them off in time and ended up suffering huge losses.

At this time.

It was late at night.

But all the lights in the Gao house were on.

The head of the Gao family, Gao Shenghai, was very calm. He wasn't frustrated because of the sudden attack from the Zuo family and Su family. In fact, there seemed to be no expression on his face at all.

He knew that both the Su family and Zuo family wanted to advance and wanted to become more closely connected to the north.

The north had told them that they wanted them to get rid of the Gao family so that Shenghai would be left with only the Su family and the Zuo family.

"The Gao family is a branch of the Gao family in the north, and we've been in Shenghai for many years now. Even though we aren't really close to the north, it's not easy to attack us either," Gao Shenghai frowned slightly. "I can't believe the Su family and the Zuo family would happily lose a son each to find a chance to attack us."

Without the Gao family, the Su family and the Zuo family would be in control of Shenghai.

He knew that those powerful families in the north didn't want their own family in Shenghai. They wanted to groom their own spokesperson and use someone else to control this city and take its resources.

The Gao family's existence blocked their plans.

"Dad, they're really aggressive. In just one day, we've made tremendous losses."

A younger lady stood in front of Gao Shenghai. She was only thirty and was confident and competent. Her presence was no less than a man's.

Gao Yali said that she would never get married because she needed to inherit the Gao family.

"I don't know who the one who pushed the blame to us is. The two families seem to insist on attacking us and don't even want to hear any explanation," she was a little angry. "I'm going to get men to kill them all!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Gao Shenghai shook his head.

The one who really killed Su Mingquan and Zuo Sizhe wasn't from the Gao family, and neither was he from the Su family nor the Zuo family. But the two families were using this as a reason to attack him.

Of course they wouldn't care for the Gao family's explanation.

"The other party is bent on wiping us out, so why would they listen to our explanation?" said Gao Shenghai. "Downsize our operations and let go of everything we can afford to. Don't fight head on with them, just make sure we don't get wiped out."

"Dad!" Gao Yali was really upset now. "But they're bullying us!"

"As long as the Gao family remains in Shenghai, they're the losers," replied Gao Shenghai calmly.

He turned to look and suddenly his expression changed. "Where's your younger brother?"

Gao Yali's heart sank. "Could this silly fellow gone to attack them?"

"Call him back at once!" ordered Gao Shenghai coldly.

"Yes, Dad!"

Gao Yali ran out immediately.

Since things had turned out this way, the illegal circle of Shenghai was definitely going to be a mess.

The Su family and the Zuo family weren't really combining forces. They would have to defend against each other even while attacking the Gao family.

This bunch of wily old foxes.

Gao Shenghai took his phone out and made a call. Someone picked up quickly.

"Is there a problem in the north?" asked Gao Shenghai. "My side is going to get messy."

"As long as your branch remains in Shenghai, then we won't lose. Hang in there," replied a hoarse voice over the phone. After a short pause, the voice continued, "It's been hard on your family all these years."

Gao Shenghai didn't say anymore. He hung up the phone, and the glint in his

eye shone brighter.

"This hand working in secret is really powerful," he murmured to himself. He had a faraway look in his eyes as if he could see a huge palm in the north controlling all of this!

Meanwhile,

At one of the Gao family's businesses.

"ATTACK!"

A thunderous roar exploded.

A figure held a steel bat in his hands as he dashed into the crowd and smashed the bat about crazily.

BAM! BAM! BAM!!

This steel bat was too overpowering and too ferocious. Everyone was sprawling on the ground and couldn't get up anymore.

"How dare you make trouble on my family's territory! You're asking for it!"

"Go to hell!"

"Get lost!"

The figure was like a furious dragon and didn't seem to feel tired at all. His steel bat was so vicious. It hit one man's shoulder and broke it on the spot.

The injured man dropped his bat from the impact, but that dragon wasn't stopping.

"Retreat! Retreat!"

The men sent by the Su family quickly started shouting and didn't want to be beaten to death.

The man in front of them was definitely a lunatic!

"Retreat?"

"I'll see where you can go!"

Gao Yali had brought men over and blocked the way. She waved her hand, "Don't let a single one get away!"

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

In just two minutes, none of the men sent by the Su family were left standing.

They all had broken arms and legs and were howling on the floor.

"Tell the Su family that if they dare to come and make trouble on my family's territory again, I'm going to beat all of you up and kill the Su family!"

Gao Bin's icy eyes made all the men sent by the Su family tremble in fear.

This terrifying man was nicknamed the Martial Arts Freak. He was really scary.

"Dad told you to go home."

Gao Yali walked over and looked at Gao Bin's muscular body. She knew that anyone hit by him would be crippled if not dead, and barely felt any pain when others hit him.

This younger brother of hers was so obsessed with martial arts. Besides training himself in martial arts, he wasn't interested in power, money or status.

He even wanted his sister to inherit the role of being the head of the family.

"Go home?" Gao Bin clenched his teeth. "These people are here to bully us and he wants me to go home? I'm going to kill them all! Even if those two old fogeys, Zuo Tian and Su Bowu, come here, I'm going to smash them too!"

"Someone else is the mastermind behind all this, and I already have some clues on hand," said Gao Yali. "Dad doesn't want us to interfere in this matter, but I don't want to listen to him this time."

She had found out that before Liu Xiaodao had mentioned a different name before dying. It wasn't the Gao family but someone else. But the two families wanted to use this chance to attack the Gao family, so they made sure that nobody found out what else Liu Xiaodao said.

"Who is it?!"

Gao Bin couldn't be bothered. He was going to kill whoever made their family

suffer such tremendous losses!

"Jiang Ning of Donghai!" Gao Yali's eyes were cold and distant. "He's in Shenghai right now!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Nobody doubted how powerful these three families were in Shenghai.

There was no information that these families couldn't get hold of in this city. Otherwise, Liu Xiaodao would have easily escaped after killing Zuo Sizhe since he was so familiar with this place.

The three powerful families of Shenghai were like a dense net that made it difficult for anyone to go in and out of Shenghai without them knowing.

So the moment Gao Bin heard that someone was behind the reason why the Gao family had become a scapegoat and the Su family and the Zuo family had joined hands to attack them, his face was filled with murder.

"Donghai? Jiang Ning? I'm going to kill him!" he roared angrily as he picked up the steel bat from the floor and was ready to rush out.

"Stop right there!" Gao Yali yelled after him. "Do you even know where he is? Do you know anything about him?"

"No I don't!" Gao Bin replied coldly. "And I don't need to! Whoever dares to harm my family is dead meat!"

Gao Yali didn't know what to do with this martial arts obsessed brother of hers. His brain really just worked in one direction.

He didn't know how to scheme or plan and always just used brute force. When it came to facing enemies, he just bulldozed forward and smashed everyone in his way.

"We can't say for sure whether the true mastermind is really this Jiang Ning of Donghai or not. He's just someone from a small city, so he might not really be capable of this." Gao Yali was a more detailed person. "Besides, what would his motivation be?"

Jiang Ning was from Donghai and she had heard quite a bit about Donghai. It was now famous for being a forbidden territory and didn't allow anyone to make trouble there at all.

So there was also a possibility that Liu Xiaodao wanted to use Donghai's fame as a forbidden territory to keep his life.

It was very dangerous to make a move without investigating carefully first.

Even though it was indeed strange that Jiang Ning had appeared in Shenghai at this point in time.

"I don't care about all that!" Gao Bin refused to listen to any of it. He slammed

the bats together to make a clanging noise and there were even sparks.

"I'd rather kill a thousand wrongly than to let off a single one!" he roared as he dashed out.

Gao Yali yelled after him but it was no use.

"Young Mistress, what are we going to do now?" asked some of her subordinates.

"We'll hold back for the moment. But if those two families send more men, kill them all!"

"Got it!"

Gao Yali started to regret telling Gao Bin about Jiang Ning. This fellow was too rash.

But she was really suspicious about Jiang Ning's appearance in Shenghai.

Why didn't he appear at some other time? Why now, when the Gao family was being attacked by those two families?

"Check everything about Jiang Ning, including what he's done in Donghai, what he's been doing in Shenghai these few days, his itinerary, the people he met, the places he's been to. Check everything carefully!"

"Got it!"

"What about Young Master?"

"Let him be," Gao Yali replied. "It's not a bad idea to test what this Jiang Ning is made of."

Right now, the Su family and Zuo family had joined hands to attack the Gao family at the same time, so the Gao family had suffered tremendous losses and whether they'd survive this crisis or not was still a problem.

If the main family in the north would support them, she wouldn't be worried. But her family wasn't very closely connected to their folks in the north, so it might be difficult to get their assistance.

Now that they were really in danger of perishing, she had to think of something else.

After Jiang Ning appeared, she made a few guesses, and she also started to draw up a backup plan.

This forbidden territory called Donghai might be her family's last chance.

Meanwhile:

Gao Bin had located Jiang Ning.

Jiang Ning didn't hide his movements at all. If he wanted to hide his movements, almost nobody in the world would be able to track him down.

He was in a mid range hotel and it was quite far from the city center.

There were no security guards nor staff at the counter. Jiang Ning had booked the entire hotel and nobody else stayed in the hotel.

"Where's he? Hunt him down!"

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Walk! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Gao Bin barged into the hotel with a few men but didn't see anybody, and was a little confused.

Had Jiang Ning escaped?

But the hotel staff couldn't have run as well.

The men ran upstairs, and soon enough...

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

All of them came rolling down the stairs.

Gao Bin's expression immediately fell.

He looked up to see Brother Gou standing at the top of the staircase and staring down at him. Brother Gou yelled angrily, "Which bastard is here to disturb my Big Boss from having tea?"

"You're asking for it!" Gao Bin gripped his steel bat tightly and pointed it at Brother Gou. "Is Jiang Ning here or not?!"

Brother Gou's expression darkened the moment he heard Gao Bin call Jiang Ning like this. Suddenly, Number 2, Number 6, Number 7 and Number 9 appeared from behind him.

All of them were staring straight at Gao Bin like a pack of vicious wolves.

Even though Gao Bin was really obsessed with martial arts and was considered a lunatic by most, his eyes narrowed because he could feel the murderous air coming from these wolves.

They were highly skilled fighters!

That was Gao Bin's immediate conclusion.

This Jiang Ning wasn't an ordinary person after all. Donghai wasn't called a forbidden territory for nothing.

But Gao Bin wasn't afraid of them at all.

There was one steel bat in each of his hands and he rubbed them together to create sparks.

"Is Jiang Ning upstairs or not?!" he roared. His voice boomed loudly and echoed through the entire lobby.

Since the wolves didn't say anything, Gao Bin stomped on the floor and made a mad dash for the stairs, swinging his bats at the wolves.

"If you don't say anything, I'll thrash my way upstairs!"

BAM!

Brother Gou moved to one side to dodge the oncoming steel bat. The steel bat hit the banister and smashed it to pieces.

"What a terrifying amount of strength!" thought Brother Gou in horror to himself.

Was this guy nuts or something?

If this force had struck him, then his bones would be crushed.

Since such a person was here to kill Jiang Ning, the wolves immediately went into battle mode and were ready to get into formation in order to kill this fellow as a team.

They exchanged glances and were ready to go.

"Let him come up," said a voice that came from upstairs.

Huang Yuming was standing there. He calmly said, "Big Boss said to let him come upstairs."

Brother Gou relaxed his fists and narrowed his eyes as he let Gao Bin pass.

Gao Bin narrowed his eyes and glared at Brother Gou as he said loudly, "Don't go anywhere! After I kill Jiang Ning, I'll fight you guys!"

He could tell that these men were Jiang Ning's bodyguards and they were indeed very strong, and even seemed to have some sort of way to coordinate their attack. It would be a waste if he didn't fight such strong opponents when he had the chance to.

Brother Gou just laughed coldly.

Kill Jiang Ning?

This barbaric fellow wanted to kill his Big Boss?

He was overestimating himself!

Gao Bin went upstairs and didn't even bother looking at Huang Yuming because he was clearly not a threat. He walked straight to Jiang Ning who was sitting in the large hall of the second floor and enjoying his tea.

DONG.

DONG.

DONG.

Gao Bin was nearly 7 feet tall. His large feet made a muffled thud on the floorboards as he walked.

He held his steel bat and pointed it at Jiang Ning as he shouted, "You're Jiang Ning? I'm going to kill you!"

Jiang Ning slowly picked up his teacup, smelled the fragrance of the tea, sipped a little tea, then put it back down.

Jiang Ning didn't seem bothered by the fact that someone was standing across from him and saying he was going to kill him.

He then looked up and looked at Gao Bin.

"Kill me?"

"Nah, not you."

"Go to hell!"

Gao Bin didn't bother saying anymore. He gave a low shout and ran towards Jiang Ning while raising both steel bats in hand.

He focused his explosive energy into those two bats and swung them towards Jiang Ning's head.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

PAK!

PAK!

Jiang Ning remained seated. He stretched both hands out and caught the two steel bats. The chair below him immediately exploded into several pieces.

But Jiang Ning was still in the same sitting position and didn't move at all.

Gao Bin narrowed his eyes violently and he was in shock.

How was this possible?

Most people couldn't bear the brunt of his strength at all. Even those who practiced martial arts didn't dare to catch his steel bats with their bare hands.

Because that would break their palms!

But Jiang Ning had caught hold of both bats and channeled all that energy from Gao Bin into the chair, while Jiang Ning came out unscathed.

"HAAA!" Gao Bin let out a roar. He felt like he had been humiliated.

Nobody had ever managed to block his attack. Jiang Ning was the first to do so.

Gao Bin let out a loud roar and wanted to pull the steel bats back and attack again, but he realized that Jiang Ning was still holding onto the other end of the bats and he couldn't get them out of Jiang Ning's grip at all.

"You..." Gao Bin stared at Jiang Ning in horror. He used all his strength and his face was all red from trying, but he still couldn't get the bats back.

"Is that all the strength you have?" Jiang Ning frowned slightly and looked a little disappointed. "So the famous Crazy Dragon Martial Arts Freak of Shenghai who's supposed to have invincible strength was just boastful words."

"What are you saying?!" Gao Bin roared angrily. "You're asking for it!"

He gave up trying to take the steel bats and let go of them. He clenched his huge fists and swung them towards Jiang Ning's head.

BAM!

Jiang Ning let go of the bat and met Gao Bin's punch with a punch.

There was a loud boom as Gao Bin staggered five or six steps back before he

could steady himself. The arm swinging by his side was a little numb and was trembling slightly even.

Jiang Ning still hadn't moved an inch.

Gao Bin had a rather conflicted expression on his face.

He was too powerful!

This Jiang Ning was way too powerful!

How could there be such a powerful person? He had fought with some of the highly skilled fighters from the north and they were afraid of him. Some of those fighters who were reaching grandmaster stage couldn't do anything about him either.

And this Jiang Ning?

He had easily blocked his attack and even sent him back by several steps.

"You...who on earth are you?!"

"You don't know who I am and you want to kill me?"

Jiang Ning flung the steel bats away and they clanged loudly on the floor and one rolled back to Gao Bin. "Don't tell me you're here with a death wish?"

"You want to kill me? You've overestimated yourself."

If anyone else dared to speak to Gao Bin like this, Gao Bin would have already gone mad, picked up the bats and gone in for another attack by now.

But he didn't move this time.

"Were you the one who framed my family?!" Gao Bin asked coldly.

"So what if it's me?" asked Jiang Ning calmly. "And so what if it's not me?"

Gao Bin clenched his teeth and was having difficulty holding his anger in.

When did he have to ask like this?

If he wanted to kill someone, he just had to go forward and attack!

But he couldn't beat Jiang Ning.

"You can't even protect your own family and you want to kill me? What a joke."

Jiang Ning found the other steel bat at his feet and kicked it across. The steel bat made a rolling noise as it rolled on the floor, making Gao Bin even redder in the face.

His weapon had been kicked by Jiang Ning just like that.

"The Su family and the Zuo family are already killing their way to your own house, and you still want to waste time here?"

Gao Bin's face immediately changed. "What did you say?"

"Martial Arts Freak? More like Dumb Freak," Jiang Ning shook his head. He couldn't be bothered anymore and sat down on another chair to continue drinking his tea.

Gao Bin immediately picked up his steel bats and turned to leave. At the door, he turned to look at Jiang Ning again.

"I'll come back to kill you!"

"No, you'll come back to beg me." Jiang Ning picked up the teapot and poured himself another cup of tea. "I'll wait for you to come and beg me."

 Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.

 Wait! I Have Something to Say!

 Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning ignored him after that.

Gao Bin didn't say anything either. He immediately brought his men back to the Gao house.

The Su family and the Zuo family were going straight to the Gao house? They were asking to be killed!

Nobody expected the Su family and the Zuo family to be this insane.

They didn't intend to slowly swallow up the Gao family. The moment they had the perfect excuse to make their move, they were going to destroy the Gao family at one shot.

The most highly skilled fighter of the Gao family was Gao Bin, this scary monster who had incredible strength.

Even martial artists who were close to grandmaster stage found it hard to fight him.

But now the Su family and the Zuo family were joining hands!

Zuo Tian and Su Bowu were no less powerful compared to Broken Sword. They were both close to grandmaster stage.

PFFFFT.

A figure went flying out and stopped breathing mid air.

The main door of the Gao house was kicked open!

BAM!

Zuo Tian walked in and said in a loud voice, "Gao Shenghai! Are you prepared to die? HAHAHA!"

"I'm here to avenge a Zuo family descendant!"

He didn't even want to wait another day.

"And the Su family too!"

There was another terrible howl as Su Bowu broke the neck of another Gao family subordinate with a loud crack.

"I can't wait to avenge the death of a Su family descendant too!"

How was the Gao family going to fight against two highly skilled fighters at the same time?

"Protect Master!" Gao Yali shouted loudly. A dozen of her family's fighters quickly surrounded Gao Shenghai.

She clenched her teeth and looked warily at Zuo Tian and Su Bowu. She shouted, "Is the Su family and the Zuo family so eager to destroy my family?"

"Aren't you afraid of offending the Gao family in the north? Aren't you afraid of offending our main line of the family?"

"Humph, young lady, threatening us is pointless," Zuo Tian laughed disdainfully. "It's not bad if the Gao family in the north can even keep themselves together."

"Shenghai doesn't need the powerful families of the north. That's against the rules."

Gao Yali scoffed angrily.

This was indeed a scheme after all. The Su family and the Zuo family wanted to destroy the Gao family long ago so that they would be the spokespersons in Shenghai.

That was the rule the powerful families of the north set.

The Gao family had broken this rule and upset the other families in the north.

"And which families in the north are the two of you relying on?" Gao Shenghai looked calmly at the two fighters.

Now that two fighters that were close to grandmaster stage were here, things were going to get tricky for the Gao family.

The Gao family in the north didn't send any fighters here, and Gao Bin wasn't around either. So who could go up against them?

The three families originally had their own territory in this city and never crossed the line. They were a stable formation and nobody dared to simply upset the balance.

But now the Su family and the Zuo family had found a reason to join hands and there was no way they were going to miss this perfect opportunity to destroy the Gao family once and for all.

"Why bother with so much talk?" Su Bowu stared at Gao Shenghai and narrowed his eyes. "It's only right for us to take a life for another!"

"Since you killed one from the Su family and one from the Zuo family, the two of us are going to wipe out your family to avenge them!"

Su Bowu immediately rushed out like lightning!

"Block him!" Gao Yali shouted. "Protect Master!"

The fighters immediately rushed over.

Zuo Tian made a move too, so the fighters had to split into two teams and it was even more difficult for them to beat them.

"Attack!" Su Bowu laughed loudly. "Zuo Tian, let's see who kills more people!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

There was no way anyone could stop Zuo Tian and Su Bowu. They were too highly skilled.

The two of them took one side each, and even a dozen fighters couldn't do anything about them.

The moment they started, they had killed two men already!

"Protect Master!" Gao Yali called out again. Even more people rushed out to stand in front of Gao Shenghai.

Gao Shenghai didn't say anything. His expression was so calm, he wouldn't frown even if he was going to die in the next moment.

"Die!" Zuo Tian started his massacre.

Tonight, they were going to wipe the Gao family out and it was their chance to make sure they no longer existed in Shenghai!

They weren't going to miss such a chance!

Su Bowu was even more violent. His palms were like knives, and each slash was fatal.

"Block him!" Gao Yali started getting anxious. She shouted angrily, "Since you've barged into our house today, at most we'll all die together!"

She gave a low shout and was about to rush out when Gao Shenghai pulled her back.

"Yali," Gao Shenghai glanced at her. "Come over here."

Gao Yali immediately ran over.

"Dad, don't worry, my men are on their way. These two old men can't beat us!" She clenched her teeth, "I won't let them!"

"Listen to me."

Gao Shenghai glanced at Zuo Tian and Su Bowu. "The Su family and the Zuo family have wanted to destroy our family for many years now, so there's no way

they're giving this chance up."

"Our folks in the north cannot assist us either."

Gao Shenghai's words made Gao Yali's heart sink.

The Gao family in the north wasn't able to send them any assistance?

Then it was going to be too difficult for the Gao family to go up against both the Su family and the Zuo family.

Even if all her men died, she might still not be able to keep the Gao family alive.

"They want to continue this game of having spokespersons in other cities, so they will never allow the Gao family to exist," said Gao Shenghai. "But you have to persist."

"Dad..."

Gao Yali started to feel that something wasn't quite right. Gao Shenghai was speaking as if these were his last words to her.

"I knew that this day would come sooner or later. Do not hate the person who started this, because he didn't do anything wrong. I've been waiting for such a person for more than a decade now."

Gao Shenghai's presence started to transform.

His eyes started to become cold and were filled with murder!

"Dad!" Gao Yali gasped. She never knew that her own father was a highly skilled fighter himself.

His presence seemed no weaker than Zuo Tian's and Su Bowu's!

"It's high time the illegal circle of Shenghai got a good scrub!" Gao Shenghai suddenly started moving. He was like a mountain when he didn't move, but he was like a storm when he did, and was extremely ferocious. "I've been hiding this for many years now, and I've finally gotten another chance to make my move."

BOOM...

Gao Shenghai suddenly dashed out and rushed towards Zuo Tian. His terrifying presence made Zuo Tian's eyes instantly narrow.

"So fast!"

BAM!

Before Zuo Tian could react, Gao Shenghai had reached him. They both threw a punch out and their fists collided.

Zuo Tian's expression changed slightly as he staggered more than ten steps backwards, while Gao Shenghai only staggered three steps backwards.

He was so powerful!

"Gao Shenghai, you've hidden this very well!" Zuo Tian snorted coldly. "Looks like we really can't keep the Gao family around."

"Why do you think the Gao family kept my family in Shenghai for?" Gao Shenghai slowly raised his fists. "I'm here to keep the Su family and Zuo family in check!"

He was here to keep watch over what used to be the Qing Sect and the Hong Sect!

"Dream on!" Su Bowu sent the man in front of him flying, then stood next to Zuo Tian and stared straight at Gao Shenghai. "Today, both of us are here to kill YOU!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Swoosh!

Swoosh!

Two of them were suddenly very coordinated. One on the left, one on the right; one in front and one at the back. They made a dash forward.

Gao Shenghai wasn't afraid at all even though he was against both of them by himself. He immediately started a fierce battle with Zuo Tian and Su Bowu.

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

The scene of three highly skilled fighters battling one another was shocking to the core.

Gao Shenghai's ability was even higher than the other two.

Even though Zuo Tian had joined hands with Su Bowu, they were still on the losing end.

That was terrifying!

Gao Yali was completely stunned as she watched this.

She had no idea that her own father was this powerful. He had never displayed his abilities in front of her before.

But Gao Yali remained worried as she watched the three of them fight it out.

The two fighters from the other two families were strong fighters who were close to grandmaster stage. Taking them on by himself was going to drain her father's energy eventually.

"Gao Bin! Where are you? Why aren't you back yet?"

She was getting very anxious.

If Gao Bin were here, then at least Gao Shenghai would have some support and wouldn't be under so much pressure.

She really shouldn't have told Gao Bin that Jiang Ning was in Shenghai.

Suddenly Gao Yali realized something. This information was possibly a trap in

the first place!

Perhaps the Su family and Zuo family had purposely leaked this information.

That was a really scheming move.

They knew that Gao Bin would immediately hunt Jiang Ning down to ask him about this situation, so they could use this chance to kill their way into the Gao house.

These bastards!

They were too scheming for her!

Gao Yali could only watch her father battle the other two and wasn't of any help.

She could only hope that Gao Bin would rush back in time, otherwise the Gao family was really in trouble!

BAM!

Gao Shenghai met them with one palm each and slid very far backwards before he could steady himself. His face was all red and he clenched his teeth hard to keep the blood boiling within him from flowing out.

"Hohoho! Gao Shenghai, I can't believe you've hidden your abilities away so well," Su Bowu laughed loudly. "If I had to take you one on one today, I might be the one who would die today!"

"But too bad, the one who's going to die tonight is you!"

He exchanged a glance with Zuo Tian and they were both actually very shocked to find that Gao Shenghai was this powerful. If either one of them had attacked Gao Shenghai by himself, he would definitely die.

Thankfully they had decided to attack together.

"Enough nonsense and kill him quickly. If that barbarian gets home, things are going to become complicated!"

Gao Bin hadn't come back yet because they had purposely leaked the news about Liu Xiaodao mentioning Jiang Ning. They knew that once Gao Bin heard that Jiang Ning was related to this matter, his temperament was such that he would definitely hunt Jiang Ning down for answers.

So they were going to take this opportunity to annihilate the Gao family!

But they didn't expect Gao Shenghai to secretly be so highly skilled. Thankfully they had come together, otherwise their families would have been annihilated instead.

"ATTACK!"

Both of them didn't hold back anymore and allowed all their true capabilities to surface.

They were going in for the kill!

BOOOOOM!

Fists and legs crashed against each other, causing one tremendous blast after another.

The fierce fight made Gao Yali become even more afraid the more she watched it.

Zuo Tian and Su Bowu actually still had strength they hadn't used yet.

"Dad..."

Her face was covered with worry and she wanted to help, but there was nothing she could do.

There was no way she could do anything when they were at this level of fighting.

"Gao Bin! Gao Bin! Where are you?!"

Her eyes were getting all red from anxiety and she clenched her fists tightly as she watched Gao Shenghai fight with the other two. Her heart was going to leap out from her mouth soon and she simply couldn't calm down.

BAM!

Suddenly, Zuo Tian sneakily landed a punch on Gao Shenghai's chest. The moment he was down, the two of them took this chance to increase their attack and moved in on their target!



Rate the Translation to Get 3 Pearls



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Everything happened at lightning speed.

It was too fast!

Gao Shenghai lifted his head but wasn't in time to dodge their attack. Both of them dealt him a fatal blow at the same time, so even if he could dodge one, he couldn't dodge the other.

He didn't even think of dodging in the first place. His expression had remained incredibly calm since the beginning of the fight.

BAM!

BAM!

The side of Su Bowu's palm landed on Gao Shenghai's shoulder, while Gao Shenghai lifted a leg to kick Zuo Tian's chest hard.

Two loud blasts later, Zuo Tian and Gao Shenghai were both sent flying and crashed hard onto the floor.

PFFFT!

Gao Shenghai opened his mouth to spray a large mouthful of blood and his face paled instantly.

"Dad!" Gao Yali's heart immediately skipped a beat.

She was about to dash over when Gao Shenghai immediately put up a hand to stop her.

"Ahhh..." There was blood flowing from Zuo Tian's mouth as his chest had caved in. This kick nearly cost him his life!

Gao Shenghai would rather take that attack from Su Bowu than to lose the chance to attack Zuo Tian.

He was too smart!

If Gao Shenghai had chosen to dodge them both, then Gao Shenghai would be dead by now.

When it came to battles between highly skilled fighters, every little decision made could decide who won and who lost.

"Kill him!" yelled Zuo Tian through clenched teeth.

Su Bowu laughed coldly.

Since Zuo Tian and Gao Shenghai were both severely injured, he was ready to kill them both!

But the more urgent task at hand was to kill off Gao Shenghai.

"Let me send you on your way!"

There was no way Su Bowu was going to miss this chance. Gao Shenghai was just lying there and couldn't even stand.

He stepped on his toes and instantly pounced over. His palm was like a knife and he swung it towards Gao Shenghai's head.

SWOOSH!

Just as his palm was about to hit Gao Shenghai, Gao Shenghai narrowed his eyes and let out a roar. Every joint and bone in his body crackled to life as he stretched his arms out and caught Su Bowu's arm.

KACHA!

Su Bowu's arm had been broken by Gao Shenghai.

His palm had also landed on Gao Shenghai's head.

CRAAAK!

Gao Shenghai's eyes opened wide as his skull cracked and blood started flowing rapidly down his forehead...

THUD!

Gao Shenghai landed heavily on the floor and his eyes were still open.

Su Bowu's arm had been broken and had nearly been torn right off his body.

If he hadn't reacted quickly enough, it was hard to say who would be the dead one now.

He took several steps back and his expression was very nasty now.

He didn't have enough energy to kill Zuo Tian anymore even though he really wanted to.

"Dad!" Gao Yali's voice was all hoarse now.

Her eyes became bloodshot as she watched Gao Shenghai collapse and she shrieked, "Kill them!! KILL THEM NOW!!"

When the remaining fighters of the Gao family saw that their master had died in battle, all of them charged forward like wild beasts who had gone mad. Even if they died, they were going to avenge Gao Shenghai!

"You overestimate yourselves!"

Even though Zuo Tian and Su Bowu were severely injured, they could still take on ordinary fighters.

Gao Yali rushed over to Gao Shenghai and knelt down to hug Gao Shenghai as she shouted loudly, "Dad! Dad! Hang in there! You hang in there, I'll call the doctor, I'll call the doctor right now!"

Gao Shenghai's eyes were wide open, but the light in his eyes had already faded..

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

Zuo Tian and Su Bowu continued to attack fiercely even with their injuries.

Suddenly, Zuo Tian's ear twitched.

"Gao Bin is back!"

There was no need to say more. He stepped lightly on his toes and kicked the man in front of him aside, then climbed over the wall to escape. Su Bowu did the same thing and didn't hesitate at all.

They were both severely injured, so if they had to fight that crazy barbarian of a Gao Bin, they'd die here tonight too.

"DIE!!!"

Gao Bin dashed in with his steel bats in hand. He swung them fiercely only to see Zuo Tian and Su Bowu escape over the wall.

He wanted to give chase, but he noticed that Gao Shenghai was sprawled on the floor and Gao Yali was sobbing miserably.

"Dad!" Gao Bin roared and his eyes were bloodshot.

He was too late.

The entire family started to cry loudly as blood flowed all over the floor. Gao Shenghai had already stopped breathing as he lay in Gao Yali's arms.

THUD.

Gao Bin fell to his knees and punched the floor hard. The marble floor instantly cracked.

"The Su family and the Zuo family – either one of us must die!" roared Gao Bin angrily.

.....



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

News traveled quickly.

It was a battle that left one person dead and two injured.

Nobody expected Gao Shenghai to be secretly hiding his skills all these years.

Both the Su family and the Zuo family had guessed that there was definitely another highly skilled fighter in the Gao family, but they had never seen him before. It never crossed their minds that it would be Gao Shenghai.

The Gao family had two highly skilled fighters. If they waited until Gao Bin grew older and became stronger, it was going to be difficult to destroy the Gao family.

After Zuo Tian and Su Bowu returned to their own homes, they were still a little fearful.

The head of the Gao family, Gao Shenghai had died, and the Gao family had suffered tremendous losses. All this had happened in a very short span of time.

This news reached Jiang Ning quickly.

He had already expected this.

Since the moment he went to visit Liu Xiaodao in hospital and told him to open up a gap in Shenghai's illegal circle, everything had gone according to Jiang Ning's expectations.

"Gao Shenghai is dead, while Su Bowu and Zuo Tian are hurt," Huang Yuming took a deep breath. "I can't believe Gao Shenghai turned out to be a highly skilled fighter. He hid himself really well."

"How's the situation at the Gao family?" asked Jiang Ning.

"They've retreated on all sides and they've given in wherever they could. Gao Yali is now in charge and they're now holding a funeral for Gao Shenghai. They are probably going to take revenge on the Su family and Zuo family soon."

He shifted his gaze. "Big Boss, are we going to make our move?"

Jiang Ning must have waited several days for this day already.

Shenghai was an important part of Jiang Ning's plan to move up north. Jiang Ning was that large palm that controlled everything.

"No hurry. The water isn't shaken up enough," Jiang Ning shook his head. "If we

don't disturb the waters enough, some of these big fish aren't going to come out."

He had only gotten one Gao Shenghai to reveal himself so far. The ones in the north backing the Su family and the Zuo family hadn't made their move yet.

Jiang Ning was going to uproot all these people along with all their connections!

Huang Yuming nodded. "Got it. Number 8 and the rest will reach Shenghai tomorrow."

"Yup, it'll be soon," Jiang Ning looked out at Shenghai's night sky. "Soon, this place will become even more beautiful than before."

There was a meaningful gleam in his eyes.

"That person watching me in the north - I'm going to let you see me this time. What will you do next?"

With such a commotion happening in Shenghai, it was impossible for the north not to take notice. This entire matter involved Donghai as well, so it wasn't hard for someone with some observation skills to notice Jiang Ning's involvement.

That person, in particular, was very well hidden and was controlling all of this from the dark. All those powerful families were also just his tools.

And now, Jiang Ning's hand was going to tear the darkness and drag this man out into the light!

"Let's go," Jiang Ning got up and said calmly. "It is sad that Gao Shenghai has passed away. He's of pretty high standing in Shenghai as well too. Since we're in Shenghai, then we should send our condolences."

The Gao family was now in grieving.

The battle between the three families had ended with one dead and two injured, shocking all of Shenghai.

But everyone knew that the fight had not ended. In fact, this was possibly only the beginning.

Gao Shenghai was dead, while the two highly skilled fighters, Zuo Tian and Su Bowu, were both injured. The Gao family still had one more crazy fighter, Gao Bin, so he was probably not going to take too long to take revenge.

But today, the Gao family had to do one thing first. That was to hold a funeral

for Gao Shenghai.

Many people from all walks of life in Shenghai came to send their condolences. Some were from the legal circles, and some were from the illegal circles.

The Gao family had been in Shenghai for many years and had established a huge network of connections. Since something as grave as the head of the family dying had happened, there were some who were afraid that the Gao family would not hold up and be eliminated by the Su family and Zuo family.

But those who knew the background of the Gao family weren't worried. After all, the Gao family in Shenghai were actually a faction from their main family in the north.

With such a steady tree behind them, how could any ordinary person just push them over?

"First bow!"

"Second bow!"

"Third bow!"

"Response from the family!"

Grieving made one's emotions heavy. Gao Yali and Gao Bin knelt at the front of the hall to bow to everyone who had come to send their condolences.

Gao Bin didn't say a word. He knelt on the floor with his head bent, but there was murder written all over his face.

He wanted revenge!

He wanted to kill everyone in the Su family and the Zuo family before holding a funeral for Gao Shenghai, but Gao Yali refused to agree.

Gao Yali was now the head of the family, so she had the final say.

"Yali, don't be too sad, I'm really sorry for your loss," an elderly man walked over to the siblings and sighed. "Since things have come to this, then both of you should think about an exit plan."

Gao Bin lifted his head with a start and glared at him angrily.

An exit plan?

The ones with no way out were the Su family and the Zuo family!

Not his family!

Gao Bin was about to speak when Gao Yali threw him a glance to stop him from talking.

"Yes indeed, Mr Guo, you're right. We should think about an exit plan." She looked at the elderly man in front of her and asked, "So what do you think our family should do now?"

"Call for a truce," the old man said with a bitter smile. "No matter what happens, it's most important to stay alive. No matter which family eventually goes down as a result of the three families fighting, it's a loss to Shenghai."

"Yali, if the two of you think I'm good enough, I could help you to plead with the Su family and the Zuo family."

Gao Yali smiled coldly. "They killed my father and you want my family to plead with them?"

"Times have changed," Mr Guo shook his head. He continued, "If the Gao family wants to continue the family line..."

"Bloody hell!" Gao Bin couldn't hold it in. He scoffed and yelled in a loud voice, "You stupid old fart, you want the Gao family to humble ourselves and plead with them? What ulterior motive do you have?!"

"Tell those two families to wash their neck clean and wait for me to slaughter them! I'm going to wipe all of them out!"

He raised his fist as if he was going to bash someone, and Mr Guo's face paled instantly from fright.

If Gao Bin punched him, he was dead for sure.

"Calm down! Calm down!"

Mr Guo immediately took several steps back. His face was pale and he didn't dare to say anymore. He quickly turned to leave.

Gao Bin was furious.

If he wasn't at his own father's funeral, he would have punched the old man to death.

More people after that came to persuade the two siblings to surrender to the Su family and Zuo family to keep themselves alive. Gao Yali managed to keep it together and didn't lose her temper even though she was angry.

Gao Bin just picked up his steel bats lying at the side, so nobody else dared to talk about such things and quickly ran off.

"These people aren't here to send their condolences at all."

Of course, Gao Yali could see that.

These people had been sent here to try and break down the two siblings' final defense.

The Su family and Zuo family were really vicious.

"After we're done with this funeral, I'm going to kill those two old things and avenge Dad!" said Gao Bin in a sinister voice.

"Jiang Ning from Donghai is here!"

The person in charge of calling the next guest's name made the announcement. Gao Yali and her brother both looked up at the same time.

Jiang Ning?

That Jiang Ning from Donghai? Why was he here?!

Jiang Ning walked in with Huang Yuming and a few others behind him.

"How dare you still come here?!" Gao Bin roared loudly and practically bounced up from the floor. He gripped his steel bats and charged towards Jiang Ning.

This was the man!

This was the man who caused his father's death!

If Jiang Ning hadn't appeared in Shenghai, would all of this have happened?

Even though Jiang Ning hadn't killed Gao Shenghai directly, he was still part of the reason.

"I'm going to kill you!"

Gao Bin was like a wild beast as he dashed over. Jiang Ning stood where he was without moving at all and merely frowned slightly.

"Stop!" Gao Yali stood up and blocked Gao Bin. "Mr Jiang is here send his condolences, don't be rude."

"Sis!" Gao Bin got upset.

"Are you not going to listen to me?" Gao Yali turned to look at Gao Bin.

Gao Bin clenched his teeth, glared hard at Jiang Ning, then put his steel bats down.

If he had really managed to reach Jiang Ning, then Gao Yali would probably have to hold another funeral for Gao Bin.

"Mr Jiang," Gao Yali looked at Jiang Ning. She didn't expect the man who had turned Donghai into a forbidden territory to be this young.

She had heard a lot about what happened in Donghai. She had also heard about how Master Fu had fallen and Shengcheng had turned into a whirlpool that caused so many people to disappear overnight.

Even the fall of the Yang family of the southeast, as well as other famous people like the five tigers of Jianzhou, had something to do with this man.

"I heard about what happened and came to offer my condolences. Miss Gao, I am really sorry to hear about what happened."

Jiang Ning nodded, took the incense sticks and walked to the altar.

"First bow!"

"Second bow!"

"Third bow!"

"Response from the family!"

Gao Yali and Gao Bin both bowed to Jiang Ning.

"Mr Jiang had no dealings with my family but you still came to offer your condolences, I'm very grateful," said Gao Yali. "Please sit over there for some tea."

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. He walked to the table and someone brought tea over.

The funeral continued all the way until 10PM. Jiang Ning continued to sit there and didn't say anything nor do anything.

After some time, more than half the guests had left, but Jiang Ning was still sitting there.

"Why are you still here?" There was nothing but anger in Gao Bin's voice. "Go away! Otherwise I might lose control and kill you!"

"But can you?" Jiang Ning asked calmly. "I'm still here because your sister has asked me to stay. I'm not staying for an idiot like you."

"What did you say?"

"I said, you're an idiot. Your father died because you were stupid and fell for their trap, so your enemies got a chance to attack. Once you left the house, the Gao family basically fell into a deep abyss and there was no way you couldn't save yourselves."

"You..."

Gao Bin was trembling in anger. But he knew that Jiang Ning was right.

If he hadn't left and protected the home, then even if those two fighters came to attack, they wouldn't have been able to kill Gao Shenghai.

"All this is thanks to you, isn't it?"

"Still so dumb," Jiang Ning shook his head. "You can continue being dumb, until the entire Gao family is destroyed."

"Nonsense!" Gao Bin yelled back angrily. "The ones who will die are the Zuo family and the Su family!"

"Is that so?" Jiang Ning suddenly laughed.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What do you mean?" Gao Bin's expression darkened.

He didn't have a good impression of Jiang Ning in the first place, and now he still dared to come here to say strange things.

Once Gao Shenghai's funeral was over, he was going to wipe out the Su family and the Zuo family.

The ones who were doomed were the Su family and Zuo family!

"Gao Bin!" Gao Yali walked over. "Don't be rude."

"Sis," Gao Bin clenched his teeth. "This fellow here is spouting nonsense! He said..."

"Go over there, I'll take care of Mr Jiang."

Gao Bin took a deep breath to suppress the anger within him and didn't say anymore.

Gao Yali's emotions were conflicted as she looked at Jiang Ning.

Gao Shenghai told her not to hate the person behind all of this. Jiang Ning was probably the person behind it, but it didn't seem possible at the same time.

How could one Jiang Ning possibly shake up the illegal circle of Shenghai?

There were many powerful families in the north backing this place.

She had found out that the Zuo family was backed by the Song family in the north, while the Su family was backed by the Tie family in the north. Both of these families were considered middle tier families, and they had tremendous influence.

They were no less than her main family line in the north.

When Gao Yali learnt that the main family in the north were unable to send help even though they were in trouble, she knew that things had become very complicated.

Was this something that Jiang Ning, the king of the forbidden territory Donghai, could possibly shake up?

That wasn't possible.

That was definitely impossible.

"Mr Jiang, why did you come to Shenghai?" Gao Yali poured a cup of tea for Jiang Ning and calmly asked another question, "Did Mr Jiang already know that something like this would suddenly happen to my family?"

She asked very directly.

"Yes, I already knew."

Jiang Ning's reply was even more direct.

Gao Yali's eyes narrowed.

"You also saw my father's death coming?"

"Yes, I did."

Gao Yali shuddered and she nearly spilled the tea out of the teapot.

She looked straight at Jiang Ning and was silent for a moment before asking, "Then why didn't you stop it from happening?"

Gao Yali immediately regretted asking.

This question was a dumb question.

Jiang Ning wasn't related to her family at all, and defending them would offend both the Su family and the Zuo family, as well as the powerful families of the north backing them. Who would be willing to do such a thing?

If he angered those two big shots in the north, this so called forbidden territory of Donghai would disappear overnight!

"Because he had to die," Jiang Ning replied. "I believe your father was even more aware of this than me."

Gao Yali's gaze wasn't steady anymore.

Jiang Ning's words were so similar to what Gao Shenghai had told her before he died.

Gao Shenghai was very calm when he was telling Gao Yali what to do after he died. It was as if he had been waiting for this day for a very long time, and dying was actually a release for him.

Was Jiang Ning the person he said he was waiting for?

What was going on?

"There are many things where you will start to despair after seeing too much of it. And after you feel despair, you would want things to change."

Gao Yali didn't quite understand what Jiang Ning said. He went on, "But some people don't have the ability to change things, or some don't have the courage to change. Some don't even dare to try changing things. Your father had the courage but no ability."

"Are you trying to say that my father had to use his own death to change whatever you're talking about?"

Gao Yali had a strange smile on her face.

But yet she felt that she had got the answer correct.

She didn't know what Jiang Ning was talking about, but yet she also suddenly felt like she understood everything.

She felt like she had fallen into a gigantic whirlpool.

There were many pairs of eyes staring at her. If she was just a little careless, that would mean the end of her.

Her father probably felt like that as the head of the family.

"Your father's sacrifice was worth it."

Gao Yali suddenly felt that she couldn't read Jiang Ning at all.

He was like a thick fog and nobody could see through it clearly. It was impossible to see who he really was.

"Then you've come to the Gao house tonight.."

"Of course it's because i'm waiting for someone."

"Waiting for who?"

"They're almost here."

.....

Meanwhile,

At the Su house,

Members of the Zuo family were also here.

The head of the Zuo family, Zuo Chunqiu, as well as Zuo Tian, were now seated in the Su house's living room.

Seated at the most important position in the room was the head of the Su family, Su Bowen, as well as Su Bowu.

The two families had competed with one another for many years. Even now, they were still rivals, but they managed to sit in the same place together.

That was because they had something more important at hand right now.

Since they were after the same thing, they might as well work together for the time being.

"The message from the north is very clear," said Su Bowen. "After we get rid of the Gao family, then the Zuo family and my family can go ahead and fight. That's within the rules."

"Nobody can challenge the rules," replied Zuo Chunqiu. "Anyone who wants to break the rules will die."

Both of them turned to Mr Guo, who was standing in the living room too, and clasped their hands politely to greet him.

"They refuse to surrender," said Mr Guo. "Gao Bin said that once the funeral is over, he'll come to kill all of you."

"Humph, this young fellow thinks he can really pull this off," scoffed Zuo Tian coldly.

They had gotten Mr Guo and the others to try to persuade the Gao siblings so as to numb their mental state. There was no way they would allow the Gao family to live.

It wasn't just the Gao family in Shenghai – the Gao family in the north had to go too!

"Let's begin," Su Bowen gave instructions, and three figures appeared.

Each of them were imposing in manner, and immensely powerful in ability.

"Let's begin," Zuo Chunqiu said the same thing and three figures appeared from his side too.

These were the highly skilled fighters that their families had been hiding all this time!

Both of them had essentially pulled out their trump cards.

On the surface, the two families only seemed to have Su Bowu and Zuo Tian, two strong fighters who were close to grandmaster stage. But they actually kept away more skilled fighters, and these were their very best.

Since the most powerful one of the Gao family, Gao Shenghai, was already dead, then who else could stop them?

"Let the Gao family disappear from Shenghai completely. From tomorrow onwards, your family and my family will compete based on our abilities," declared Su Bowen in a loud voice.

Zuo Chunqiu laughed coldly and stood up. "I have the same thoughts!"

He then walked out with his men.

As for those six figures, they disappeared quickly into the night.

Su Mingchang narrowed his eyes as he watched the Zuo family members leave the house. "Dad, I've already made preparations. Once tomorrow comes, we can make our move on the Zuo family!"

"Mingwei's side is also making preparations," Su Bowen said threateningly. "One month. I give you two one month to make sure this city is fully within the Su family's control!"

He didn't expect that the Zuo family to be hiding so many fighters among his own descendants. Many of them were active in the legal circle, but today he found out that they were all highly skilled and didn't seem any weaker than Gao Bin.

Wiping out the Gao family overnight was going to be so simple.

The Zuo family had hidden themselves well!

But of course, the Su family wasn't weak either.

Tonight was the time for both sides to pull out their trump cards. Once the next day came, it was time for an even fiercer battle.

Shenghai was destined to fall within his family's control.

At the same time,

It was late at night now, but the lights in the Gao house were still on,

Gao Yali sat at the table and there was disappointment on her face.

"What did you say? There are people coming again?"

She couldn't believe it. Didn't those two families only have Zuo Tian and Su Bowu as their best fighters? There were actually more?

But then when she thought about how her father had hidden himself so well, it wouldn't be surprising if those two families had hidden more skilled fighters away as well.

"They're here."

Jiang Ning picked up his teacup without even looking up.

Immediately after he said that, a few dead bodies came flying right in!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

BAM!

BAM!

BAM!

There were three blasts as three of the Gao family's men went flying and died on the spot.

"Who is it?!" Gao Bin roared and a large group of men rushed out.

How dare anyone come to make trouble at a funeral!

KA KA KA!

Gao Bin gripped his steel bats tightly, and it was time to finally vent the fury that he had suppressed in his heart. He saw six figures come in from the door and his eyes narrowed violently.

"It's you guys!"

Of six of them in front of him, three of them were from the Su family and three were from the Zuo family.

He was fairly familiar with all of them and had actually met them several times before.

The three from the Su family were all Su Bowu's children. They never showed any signs of practicing any martial arts and were only active in the legal circle. Gao Bin never knew that they were trained and were all so highly skilled.

The three from the Zuo family were Zuo Chunqiu's sons, the elder brothers of Zuo Sizhe. They were also very active in the legal circle and were actually of fairly high standing in the legal circle.

Gao Bin never imagined that they had actually managed to hide their real abilities so well.

"That's right! Tonight, we will join hands to wipe out the Gao family!" The eldest son of the Zuo family, Zuo Shangfeng, clenched his fists and knuckles cracked loudly. "I've always heard about how you've trained hard and your strength is unparalleled. It's said that among the next generation in Shenghai, you're the most powerful. I don't think that will be true anymore after tonight."

"This fellow's life is mine," said the Su family members. "We're killing this fellow!"

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

Everyone from the Gao family gathered together. There were about a hundred of them and these were the best that Gao Yali had. Besides about a dozen highly skilled fighters, the rest were not bad themselves too.

She had already arranged for her men to be on standby because she was afraid something might happen at the funeral.

Even though she couldn't believe it was really happening, her heart was pounding wildly now.

"You knew they were going to come?" she looked at Jiang Ning with a look of disbelief. Jiang Ning actually knew everything.

He couldn't have arranged for this, so he must have made a guess or deduced that this would happen. But since Jiang Ning was able to correctly predict every step of the way, that made him a really scary person.

"I've been waiting for them for a long time."

Jiang Ning looked at up at the six men.

They were the Zuo family and Su family's real trump cards.

It was just about their fighting abilities, but also about their potential and their futures.

Even if Zuo Chunqiu or Su Bowen died, it wouldn't have much impact on the two families because they had already secretly groomed their next generation to take over their positions immediately. The two powerful families would remain as powerful as ever.

It wasn't Jiang Ning's style to just trim a plant without removing its roots completely.

And now, the roots were exposed.

BAM!

Both sides had already started fighting in the courtyard and showed no mercy whatsoever.

Every move was fatal. There was the glint of knives and blood spraying everywhere!

Gao Yali immediately started feeling anxious.

These six men were very powerful!

It seemed like all of them were no weaker than Gao Bin. Two of them were now fighting Gao Bin while the other four were like wolves among sheep, killing off the Gao family men easily.

PFFFT..

AHHH!

CRAAAACK.

Ordinary men were no match for these six at all. It was as if they were made from clay and ceramic, and couldn't even hold up against one move from the six of them.

In just a few minutes, more than a dozen had been killed.

There was blood everywhere, and a severed limb even landed in front of Gao Yali.

Her heart pounded wildly. Even though she had been in control of the illegal circle for the Gao family, she had never seen such a brutal scene before.

Her hand was trembling.

She breathed hard and her chest heaved.

"Protect Young Mistress!" her bodyguard roared as he stood in front of Gao Yali. But Zuo Shangfeng caught hold of his throat, then broke his neck with a hard flick of his wrist.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"You..." Gao Yali started to panic.

Were they the trump cards of the Zuo family and the Su family?

"Hello Miss Gao, how are you?" Zuo Shangfeng walked over confidently. He looked up and noticed that Jiang Ning was still drinking his tea and ignored him. Zuo Shangfeng frowned.

"I didn't think that you would still have a guest around."

Jiang Ning glanced at him and didn't say anything.

Gao Yali's heart was beating wildly as she turned to look at Jiang Ning. "Aren't you going to do anything?"

"Why should I?" replied Jiang Ning. "He hasn't come to beg me yet."

He looked over at Gao Bin, who was fighting a losing battle.

Zuo Shangfeng laughed loudly and contemptuously at these words.

"That's a clever decision. This is not something that you can do anything about in the first place."

Would this Jiang Ning dare to interfere in the Zuo family matters?

Even if the Gao family in the north sent people here to help, they wouldn't be able to stop them from annihilating the Gao family today!

The Gao family was going to bleed to death this very night!

"I can't believe the Zuo family and the Su family would actually team up together."

Gao Yali clenched her teeth and tried to keep calm.

Even her own younger brother might not stand a chance against a skilled fighter like Zuo Shangfeng, much less herself.

But now Gao Bin was being attacked by two others and could barely save himself. The rest were getting slaughtered too.

The Gao family was really doomed this time.

Even if Jiang Ning wanted to interfere, he might not have the ability to. These six were too strong!

BAM!

Gao Bin's steel bats had been sent flying. He swung his fists and started charging towards the two attacking him.

When he saw that Zuo Shangfeng was approaching Gao Yali, he shouted at him, "If you dare to hurt my sister, I'll kill you!"

He struggled to get to his sister, but he was blocked by the two he was fighting. It was difficult enough to even stay alive.

There were actually six such powerful fighters besides those two old men.

"Hoho, as I said, tonight, none of the Gao family members will be able to escape." Zuo Shangfeng narrowed his eyes and stared at Gao Yali. "Do you want to do it yourself or you want me to send you on your way?"

He continued slowly walk closer and closer to Gao Yali and wasn't bothered by Jiang Ning sitting there at all.

To him, the fate of the Gao family was already sealed and even God couldn't change it!

Gao Yali pulled out a knife from her waist and suddenly rushed towards Zuo Shangfeng, "Die!"

There was determination in her eyes.

PAK!

Zuo Shangfeng laughed coldly and hit the knife out from Gao Yali's hand, then slapped Gao Yali hard across the face, and she fell to the floor.

"That's all you've got?" Zuo Shangfeng now had the knife in his hands and placed it against Gao Yali's neck. The blade gleamed in the light and Gao Yali didn't dare to move at all.

If Zuo Shangfeng's wrist turned towards her neck, she was definitely going to die.

"Stop it!" Gao Bin's eyes were bloodshot and he took several punches. He had been slashed from the back as well and his wound was bleeding profusely.

When he saw that Gao Yali was just one step away from dying, he went completely crazy but he didn't have the strength to save her even though he really wanted to.

The Gao family bodyguards were almost all dead!

"Jiang Ning! Jiang Ning!" Gao Bin yelled loudly like he a caveman who had gone crazy. "I beg you! I'm begging you! Save my sister! Hurry up and save my sister!!"

Jiang Ning held the teacup in his hands and didn't look up.

"Is that how you beg someone?"

THUD!

Gao Bin punched the two men in front of him away but didn't continue attacking them. Instead, he suddenly turned around to face Jiang Ning and fell on his knees.

"Save my sister!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wah! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

BAM!

BAM!

Two legs landed on Gao Bin's chest and sent him flying and crashing hard onto the floor.

Since he was kneeling, his rivals weren't going to lose this chance!

"Beg him?"

"What is he even?"

"Nobody is going to stop us from killing them!"

The six of them laughed loudly. The fighters from both families were still competing to see who killed more people.

Gao Bin was sprawled on the floor and threw up a mouthful of blood. He didn't care about his injuries and didn't care if he died. But he didn't want anything to happen to his sister!

"Jiang Ning...save my sister!" He struggled to get up, then knelt towards Jiang Ning again. "I'll use my life in exchange!"

Gao Yali's eyes were all red.

"No! Don't!"

She watched as the two men made their way towards Gao Bin again and wished she would die now so that she wouldn't drag her brother down with her.

"Nobody can save you two." Zuo Shangfeng looked up at Jiang Ning. "I can't believe you two are stupid enough to think that someone would."

"The one who chooses to do the right thing at the right time is an intelligent man. I'm sure you understand that."

His words carried a warning and a threat!

Jiang Ning sipped his tea, put down the teacup gently, then smiled faintly.

"No, I don't understand that."

Just as he finished speaking.

SWOOSH!

The teacup on the table suddenly came flying towards Zuo Shangfeng like a bullet.

Zuo Shangfeng's eyes narrowed and he immediately used the knife in his hand to block it.

It was too fast!

PIANG!

The teacup hit the knife so hard that the vibration made his wrist numb and he immediately scrambled backwards.

Zuo Shangfeng pulled himself together quickly and there was a glint in his eyes as he swung the knife towards Gao Yali's throat again.

"Impossible!"

A strong gust of wind hit him, and Jiang Ning appeared in front of him.

That was impossible!

How was he so fast?

Zuo Shangfeng's arm was still in mid air and hadn't reached Gao Yali's throat yet.

"You're asking for it!"

He twisted his waist so that the sharp knife was now aimed for Jiang Ning's heart.

BAM!

But Jiang Ning's fist was too fast.

One punch!

His punch was like a shell that crashed heavily on Zuo Shangfeng's chest before he could even bring the knife down.

There was a tremendous boom.

"AHHH!"

Zuo Shangfeng went flying out and stopped only after rolling several times on the floor.

He looked up in terror at Jiang Ning. He wiped the blood from his lips and said threateningly, "He's a highly skilled fighter!"

He didn't think that this fellow in front of him was this terrifying!

If that punch had landed an inch further to his left, then he would probably be dead by now.

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

The other five immediately rushed over and couldn't be bothered to kill Gao Bin and Gao Yali now.

This one punch shocked them beyond belief.

How did someone so terrifying exist in the Gao family?

"Who are you?!" Zuo Shangfeng demanded loudly. His eyes were wary and didn't have any of the disdain he had earlier.

"Jiang Ning from Donghai." Jiang Ning scanned all of them and nodded satisfactorily. "You're all gathered here now. After hiding for so long, you're all finally out."

Gao Yali was completely dumbfounded.

She didn't know what happened at all. Jiang Ning was behind her just now, so how...how was he in front of her now?

And how did he send Zuo Shangfeng flying with one punch?

Everything happened too quickly and she didn't see anything.

Even Gao Bin only saw Jiang Ning's shadow from afar. He had appeared in front of Zuo Shangfeng like a ghost.

And that punch...

If Gao Bin was the one who got punched, he would be dead by now!

"Donghai? That forbidden territory?"

The ones from the Su family immediately remembered him. Su Mingquan had been taught a lesson by this Jiang Ning and embarrassed their family.

But since Jiang Ning dared not kill Su Mingquan, it meant that he was wary of the Su family.

But now he was going up against the Su family!

"I'd advise you not to be a busybody," said Zuo Shangfeng coldly.

"Did you hear that earlier?" asked Jiang Ning. "That boy has knelt down to beg me. So from today onwards, his life belongs to me. Besides myself, nobody else is allowed to kill him."

"What bold words!"

"Kill him!"

Six of them exchanged glances and didn't hesitate any longer.

If they didn't kill Jiang Ning, there was probably no way to kill Gao Yali and Gao Bin.

What was this bullshit about Donghai being a forbidden territory?

They were going to wipe everything out in one night!

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

SWOOSH!

.....

Six of them surrounded Jiang Ning.

Gao Yali felt like her heart was on tenterhooks.

It was too dangerous!

Gao Bin nearly died just trying to fight two of them.

And now Jiang Ning had to face six of them!

BAM!

But there was a sudden blast and Zuo Shangfeng was sent flying out again.

But this time he didn't even have the chance to yelp. He crashed hard on the floor and died on the spot.

"One down!" yelled Jiang Ning.

Then he threw a second punch.

BAM!

After another blast, one of the Su family members was hit. His chest sank right in as his mouth sprayed blood and his backbone was instantly broken.

Dead!

"Two down."

Jiang Ning's voice sounded like he was a demon from the depths of hell and made the remaining four fear for their lives.

He was so terrifying!

Too terrifying!

How did someone so terrifying even exist?

Jiang Ning's fists were like the grim reaper's scythe, and was specially meant for harvesting lives.

"Three down!"

"Four down!"

"Five down!"

Three punches later, three figures went flying out. They all died instantly upon impact and didn't even have the chance to defend themselves.

The last one standing was trembling violently and didn't dare to go anywhere close to Jiang Ning.

His lips trembled as he watched Jiang Ning approach him slowly. He was slowly beginning to have a nervous breakdown.

"Don't come over...don't come over..."

He felt all his hair stand on end.

Jiang Ning stopped walking towards him and the last one standing breathed a sigh of relief.

PFFFT!

But the next thing he knew, a steel bat had stabbed through his heart from the back.

Gao Bin was holding a steel bat with his hands and had a threatening look on his face.

"Die! Go to hell!"

THUD!

The six best fighters from the Su family and the Zuo family were all dead!

The wind blew past and blew away the stench of blood. Gao Yali was still shaking.

Her mind was all blank and couldn't believe what she just saw.

Was Jiang Ning...a god?

"Sis!" Gao Bin dashed over and helped Gao Yali to her feet. He was relieved to see that she was alright.

Gao Yali had very nearly been killed!

He turned to look at Jiang Ning. The hatred in his heart had turned into gratitude as well as some reverence for Jiang Ning.

He was too strong!

Even a grandmaster fighter would have died at Jiang Ning's hands.

"You..."

Gao Yali tried to speak but she realized that her throat was completely dry and she couldn't get a single word out.

After swallowing her saliva several times, she finally managed to say, "You...you deliberately waited for the six of them to appear."

These six men were the ones that the two families had hidden away the most carefully. They were the two families' trump cards and represented their

futures. They were even more important than those two old men who fought for them.

The two families probably thought that it was a good chance for them to understand how powerful their future rivals were, but nobody expected Jiang Ning to be waiting here for them already.

And now, they were all dead.

"If you're going to trim those plants, then you've got to make sure you get rid of the roots," said Jiang Ning calmly. "Now that the roots are gone, it's time to get those plants."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Gao Yali and Gao Bin were already numb from their shock.

The six corpses lying in front of them were the hope and future of the Su family and the Zuo family!

Every one of them were no weaker than Gao Bin, so given enough time, these two families would surely be able to control Shenghai, and the Gao family was destined to perish.

But now?

All six of them had died on the spot.

While the Gao siblings were alive and well.

"Trim the plants?" Gao Yali's lips were still trembling.

For that moment as she stood behind Jiang Ning, she felt like she was looking at a god.

The aura around Jiang Ning made her entire soul tremble.

Was he...was he a god?

"I'll leave those withering plants for you two to take revenge," said Jiang Ning. "I'm not interested."

If Gao Bin couldn't even handle Su Bowu and Zuo Tian while they were still severely injured, then the Gao family was definitely doomed.

Jiang Ning's aim was to get rid of ones who held these families together. It was enough that he had killed off their next generation.

"Why did you help us?" Gao Yali bit her lips. The

eyes that looked towards Jiang Ning were still trembling.

She wasn't sure what emotions she was going through right now.

There was some shock, some fear, and she started to idolize Jiang Ning now.

She probably didn't even know what her emotions were anymore.

"This is what Gao Shenghai used his life in exchange for."

Jiang Ning then put his hands behind his back and left.

Gao Bin's hands were still shaking and he finally snapped back to reality after Jiang Ning had already disappeared into the distance.

"Sis, why...why did he do this?"

What Gao Bin was trying to ask was why Jiang Ning wanted to uproot the Su family and the Zuo family. The six men they had hidden away so carefully were clearly the two families' hope and future.

Even the Gao family never knew about them.

If all this didn't happen and they didn't have to expose these six prematurely, then Shenghai would probably have no place for the Gao family in the future either.

"Why...?" Gao Yali laughed bitterly. She wouldn't know why.

She turned to look at Huang Yuming who hadn't left

yet. The meaning in her eyes was very clear.

"I suppose it's because his wife is on the way to Shanghai, and I suppose she would come latest by the end of the month. Big Boss doesn't want any unnecessary people to stick around and affect her mood," explained Huang Yuming calmly.

BOOM.

His words were like a bolt of lightning that struck the siblings' heads.

"He already has a woman by his side?" Gao Yali asked in surprise. There was a little disappointment in her voice.

She then quickly sorted her thoughts out and said, "It's impossible for a man like him to have no woman by his side. She must be very outstanding."

"Big Boss was the one who went after her."

Huang Yuming didn't say anymore and left.

Gao Yali and Gao Bin were still in shock.

"If such a man...took the initiative to go after her, what sort of woman would she be?" Gao Yali murmured to herself

Gao Bin glanced at her and sensed something. He didn't say anything and just shook his head.

A man like Jiang Ning wasn't easily controlled by any woman. Never mind his sister – there were very few women among the powerful families of the north who had the right to go anywhere close to Jiang Ning.

He was too powerful!

He wasn't like a normal human being at all. His prowess was too incredible for words.

He had gotten rid of the best that the Su family and Zuo family had hidden away for all these years just so that they wouldn't affect the mood of a woman?

Thinking about it was already terrifying.

"Nobody can afford to offend this man," thought Gao Bin to himself. "And certainly, nobody can afford to offend his woman!"

He took a deep breath and turned to look at Gao Yali who was still staring into space. "Sis, let's get ready to attack."

Gao Yali snapped back to reality.

Jiang Ning had said so already. He had gotten rid of the roots, so the next thing they had to do was to get rid of Su Bowu and Zuo Tian!

This was their chance!

She knew that Jiang Ning had operated quietly from the very beginning and didn't care about leaving his name in Shenghai.

"Let's make our move!" Gao Yali immediately replied. "We can't let the Su family and the Zuo family remain here!"

Huang Yuming said that Jiang Ning's wife was going to reach Shenghai by the end of the month. That meant that they had to clean out those two families before the end of the month.

They could not allow the woman precious to Jiang Ning run into any unhappiness at all. They wouldn't be able to bear the consequences of that.

The Gao family started making preparations.

Gao Yali called everyone together and headed for the Su house without hesitation.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

At the Su house.

Su Bowen and Su Bowu's expressions never relaxed.

They weren't nervous because of the Gao family. To them, the Gao family was as good as dead.

They were now thinking about how to deal with the Zuo family.

Now that both families had revealed their trump cards, the next left to do was to fight it out to the bitter end.

Whoever won the final battle would be the leader of Shenghai's illegal circle and would be able to control all of Shenghai's resources.

"After tonight, it will be a fight between the Su family and the Zuo family," said Su Bowen. "Once we take Shenghai down and become the north's spokesperson in Shenghai, then the north will support us with a huge amount of resources."

"The Su family's future will be bright and promising, I look forward to that."

Su Bowu moved slightly and there was a sharp pain in his wounds.

But compared to the future of the Su family, these injuries were nothing.

"Zuo Tian and I are old, so we will have to count on the youngsters for the future," said Su Bowu.

"Tonight is their chance to understand their rivals, and they will have to count on themselves to decide who will win and who will lose in the future."

They had wiped out the Gao family from their line of sight.

After all, the Gao family would be no more after tonight.

"After the Gao family has been exterminated, we will also have to fight for the assets and resources they leave behind," said Su Bowen. "You can take charge of this."

Su Bowu nodded and scoffed coldly.

"The Gao family? They're already history."

BAM!

A figure suddenly came flying in and crashed on the floor and dead. His head was crushed in!

Su Bowu's expression changed.

"The ones becoming history is the Su family and the Zuo family!"

It was Gao Bin.

He was wielding his two steel bats violently with great ferocity.

One man flew out after another and died on the spot.

"You didn't die!" Su Bowu was in shock. Why was Gao Bin still alive?

That wasn't possible!

The six best fighters from both families had joined hands. Even a grandmaster fighter would have

trouble getting away, never mind Gao Bin.

How was Gao Bin still alive?

"Tsk, of course I didn't die. Are you very disappointed?"

"The ones who died are the ones from your families! Your six best hidden fighters, your trump cards! They're all dead! MUAHAHAHA!"

Gao Bin walked briskly into the living room and there was murder all over his face as he pointed the steel bats at Su Bowu and Su Bowen. "After I'm done killing you two animals, I'm off to the Zuo house!"

SWOOSH!

He didn't bother saying anymore. He raised his steel bats and dashed towards Su Bowu with great ferocity.

"You punk! How dare you!"

Su Bowu jumped up from his seat. But his injuries were too serious for him to fully fight back.

Besides, Gao Bin was now furious and burning with murder!

"ATTACK!!!"

He was like a caveman venting his fury.

There was no way Su Bowu could fight this riled up nutcase while sustaining such severe injuries.

He wasn't careful and couldn't dodge in time. Gao Bin's steel bat landed right on his head and smashed his head to mush.

PFFT.

Red and white mush sprayed everywhere.

"Bowu!" So Bowen shouted loudly as his eye bulged.

"You still have time to care about others?"

Gao Bin didn't even bother to take a second glance at Su Bowen after smashing his head in. He lifted his bats and headed towards Su Bowen.

His father had died because of these people!

He was going to avenge his father this very night!

"AHHHH!"

Su Bowen yelled loudly when he saw those steel bats coming for him, but he couldn't dodge them.

The bats came closer and closer to his face.

Finally, there was the sound of a skull being smashed.

The blast of his own head being smashed was the last sound he heard before he died.

After looking upon the dead bodies of the two brothers, Gao Bin trembled slightly. There was still fury in his bloodshot eyes.

"It's your turn, Zuo family..."

A legend was born this very night in Shenghai.

The crazy Gao Bin held two steel bats in his hands and killed his way into the Su house and the Zuo house. He had killed Su Bowen and his brother, as

well as the head of the Zuo family, Zuo Chungiu and Zuo Tian. He had smashed all their heads in.

They had died terribly.

There were also countless casualties and fatalities from both families, and they both suffered tremendous losses.

It was as if a deity had descended in the night and shocked all of Shenghai. Nobody could believe that something like that could happen.

When the sun rose, everyone thought that the Gao family was doomed for sure.

The Gao family would no longer exist in Shenghai. After all, since the Zuo family and Su family had joined hands and sent their best fighters, it was too easy for them to kill off the remaining Gao siblings.

But in the end?

The six fighters from the two families died that night.

Even the head of the families and their most trusted fighters had died at Gao Bin's hands.

This was unbelievable.

Gao Bin had instantly turned into the legend of Shenghai.

Some said that Gao Bin had kept his true abilities hidden and he had already reached a grandmaster level of fighting. Gao Shenghai's death had forced him to reveal his true abilities and he ended up wiping out both families.

There were also some who said that a mysterious person appeared to help the Gao family to kill off all the strong fighters from both families.

But since the Gao family in the north wasn't able to send help, then who else would take such a great risk and help the Gao family?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

A legend!

Gao Bin had become a legend in Shenghai.

From now on, Shenghai only had one Gao family, and the Su family and Zuo family no longer existed.

But only Gao Yali and Gao Bin knew what really happened.

What was this nonsense about being a legend?

The truth behind this legend was a god!

A god that nobody dared to offend or cross!

Even Gao Bin shuddered when he thought of how terrifying Jiang Ning's ability was. He wasn't human at all. Could humans become so strong?

"Sis, what are we going to do now?" This was a question that worried Gao Bin.

The Su family and Zuo family had fallen overnight. Su Mingwei and Su Mingchang, as well as the remnant of the Zuo family, had all escaped to the north overnight.

Soon enough, the two families would disappear completely from Shenghai.

The Gao family had survived, but how were they going to continue living?

If they chose the wrong path, Jiang Ning wouldn't give them a chance at all.

"We'll follow Donghai's model."

Gao Yali had thought about this for an entire night.

She still couldn't understand what Jiang Ning was trying to do. That sort of man was clearly planning something huge, and it wasn't something that she could understand on her own.

But since Donghai had become a forbidden territory as well as a rapidly advancing city, that meant that Donghai had taken the right path.

As long as they followed in Jiang Ning's footsteps, then there would be no problem.

At least they would stay alive.

Gao Yali knew very well that Jiang Ning wasn't looking for a spokesperson, unlike the game that those powerful families in the north was playing.

What he needed were people to protect social order. To protect the ordinary folks right at the bottom of society.

Jiang Ning found out about everything that happened in Shenghai on his way back.

He didn't care about how the Gao family was. As long as the two siblings were intelligent enough, they would know what to do.

"Now all of Shenghai knows that the Gao family is the most powerful one and will become the leader and controller of Shenghai's illegal circle," said Huang Yuming. "But nobody knows that the one behind all of this is you."

"Some people will guess it right," replied Jiang Ning calmly. "But that's not important now."

At the same time.

The commotion in Shenghai had caused a huge uproar in the north.

This was even more shocking than Donghai and Shengcheng's uprising, and more shocking than when Master Fu died or when Broken Sword wreaked havoc in the north.

The Gao family had survived despite being destined to perish.

The Su family and Zuo family had vanished overnight despite joining hands to destroy the Gao family.

This was practically a miracle.

It was unbelievable.

"What on earth is going on?"

At the Song house in the north.

The Song family knew all about this combined effort to destroy the Gao family. In fact, a lot of the information the Zuo family had came from them.

They thought that they were definitely going to win and they would take a cut of Shenghai's resources once it was split between the Zuo family and the Su family. But things turned out so differently from what they had expected.

All the important family members of the Song family were in the living room and their expressions were grim.

Standing in front of them was Zuo Chungiu's third son, Zuo Sangian. He had been lucky enough to escape and he looked a complete mess.

"Mr Song, you have to help the Zuo family!" He fell to his knees with a thud and tears streamed down his face. "My father and my uncle all died at Gao Bin's hands, and my brothers..."

Zuo Sangian cried miserably as he kowtowed to the head of the Song family, Song Weiming. His head knocked against the floor again and again.

"Get up," Song Weiming frowned. "What happened, tell me exactly what happened!"

"I...I don't really know either," Zuo Sangian clenched his teeth. "My family joined hands with the Su family, and my brothers went with the Su family's top three young and highly skilled fighters to destroy the Gao family. But in the end, all six of them died!"

The expressions of the Song family members changed.

The Song family and the Tie family had allowed the Zuo family and Su family to rely on them respectively because these two powerful families had pulled out their trump cards to prove themselves.

Each family had three young and highly skilled fighters, which meant that their backers in the north were assured of a spokesperson in Shenghai for the next few decades. These young people were capable and stable, so they would be able to reap sufficient benefits for the families in the north.

But now they were all dead!

"Gao Bin...some say that Gao Bin had hidden his true capabilities and that he was actually at grandmaster level, so he managed to kill off the six fighters and also annihilated my family and the Su family!"

Zuo Sangian was shuddering as he said these words.

He had witnessed how Gao Bin had used his steel bats to smash his own father's head.

The entire Song family fell silent.

A grandmaster would be feared even in the north. Who could deal with Gao Bin in Shenghai now?

They had miscalculated their move.

"I don't think it's Gao Bin."

Suddenly a voice spoke out softly from one corner of the room. "Someone else probably killed those six young and highly skilled fighters."

Everyone immediately turned to look at the person who spoke.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What nonsense are you talking about?" Song Weiming's eldest son, Song Gang, cut in as he sat next to Song Weiming and frowned.

"The truth of this matter is very clear. Gao Bin had hidden his true capabilities. Otherwise, why else would we have failed?"

He looked rather displeased, as if he was already unhappy to see Song Xiaoyu at such an important family gathering.

This Song Xiaoyu was still spouting nonsense at such an important gathering.

"Bro, I'm not spouting nonsense," Song Xiaoyu said with a smile.

He had very delicate features and still looked very youthful, as if he was still a teen.

He was the youngest of five siblings in the Song family, and had the least resources and experience.

In a world like the north where all the children had to fight tooth and nail to become the head of the family, he was clearly too weak. His words didn't seem to carry any weight in the family at all.

"Not nonsense?" The second son of the Song family, Song Cheng, looked at Song Xiaoyu. "Tell me then, who could this other person possibly be?"

Song Xiaoyu looked at his two older brothers.

He scratched his head and smiled a little sheepishly. "I don't know who it is, but I'm sure it's not Gao Bin. With that sort of personality, there's no way he would hide his true abilities."

Song Gang and Song Cheng shook their heads when they heard what Song Xiaoyu said.

He was still too childish and ignorant.

If that wasn't spouting nonsense, then what was?

"You can count the number of grandmasters in the north on one hand, and they were all in the north when this fight occurred, you can check this easily. Are you saying that there's some other grandmaster level person who went to help the Gao family?" Song Cheng couldn't help but mock his brother, "And what would make a grandmaster work so hard for a family like the Gao family?"

Song Xiaoyu shrank back and didn't speak anymore.

His words didn't carry any weight, so nobody believed him.

"Since Dad allowed you to join this gathering to listen and learn, then just listen and don't simply air your opinions like that," said Song Gang with some displeasure in his voice.

The next head of the Song family could be himself or Song Cheng, but definitely not Song Xiaoyu.

He was too childish.

"Alright, enough," Song Weiming put a hand up to stop them from quarreling.

He actually felt that what Song Xiaoyu said made sense.

Besides, it wasn't always that easy to track where a grandmaster level fighter really was.

There was also a possibility that it wasn't a grandmaster from the north. But the Gao family would have had to pay a very high price to hire such a fighter.

"We're not the only ones looking at this matter. The entire northern region is looking into this, so if there's any information, it'll leak soon."

This whole thing was a mystery and nobody knew at the moment.

Nobody could understand how the Gao family managed to turn the tables.

This entire thing was a miracle! It was the hand of God at work!

Of course, they had no idea that a god was behind the Gao family.

The invincible God of War!

Everyone in the north was guessing the truth behind this whole thing. Only one person was very sure that Jiang Ning was the one behind this.

The truly powerful family of the north!

In the Jiang house.

Jiang Daoran was in his study. His hair was a little messy and he was wearing a loose long sleeved shirt as he moved his brush wildly across the paper.

The man in a suit standing next to him had a stern expression and looked as solemn as always.

"Is it really Young Master?"

He didn't obtain any accurate information.

"If it's not him, then who?"

Jiang Daoran looked at the calligraphy he had just completed and frowned slightly, as if he wasn't too pleased with it. "Who else would be capable of this? And who else is this bored?"

The man in a suit didn't dare to respond.

Only Jiang Ning's biological father dared to say that he was too bored. Nobody else dared to.

"But why did Young Master do such a thing?" he just had to ask.

"Why?"

Jiang Daoran laughed coldly and looked up at the man in a suit. "Can't you tell?"

The man in a suit, Jiang Hai, hung his head. "I'm really sorry, but I can't tell."

"It's because of that girl!"

Jiang Daoran scoffed and seemed to still be a little angry. He just threw the words he had written aside and spread another blank sheet of paper on the table and picked up the brush again.

"He cleaned out Donghai, set up Lin Group and let that girl control the company and start her career."

"He cleaned out Shengcheng in Tianhai, and that was Lin Group's first expansion into Shengcheng."

"Then he cleaned out the southeast region, and Lin Group's new product took the entire area by storm."

"And now, Shenghai is being cleaned out. You get it now?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

These few statements from Jiang Daoran made Jiang Hai's heart tremble violently.

He opened his mouth to speak but didn't know what to say. Had Jiang Ning done so much just so that Lin Yuzhen could run a company?

Was that a joke?

Jiang Ning was more than capable of giving Lin Yuzhen a company worth a few hundred billion dollars. Why go through so much trouble and make Lin Yuzhen work so hard?

Wasn't that...wasn't that too much effort for no good reason?

"Now do you also feel that punk is really too bored?"

Jiang Daoran scoffed and didn't even want to call Jiang Ning by name. "I don't care what he wants to do. But I would like to see that girl."

There wasn't anybody else in the world who could make Jiang Ning do such a thing.

Not even him, Jiang Ning's biological father!

Jiang Daoran wanted to see who was this amazing person called Lin Yuzhen and wanted to know how she managed to get Jiang Ning to treat her this way.

Jiang Hai stiffened up and got a little nervous when he heard that Jiang Daoran wanted to see Lin Yuzhen.

"Master, Young Master said that he doesn't want any of the Jiangs to step into Donghai. Anyone who goes..."

"Anyone who goes will get killed, right?"

Jiang Daoran flung the brush onto the paper and the ink immediately stained one section of the paper.

His expression was stern but also rather conflicted. He seemed to be angry, yet also helpless and filled with regret.

"Even if I go, he'll kill me too."

Jiang Daoran knew this very well.

Jiang Ning definitely dared to kill him.

"Master, please reconsider," Jiang Hai said in a solemn voice.

He had been by Jiang Daoran's side for nearly twenty years and had protected Jiang Daoran from countless dangers, so nobody had been able to harm Jiang Daoran so far.

But Jiang Hai didn't have any confidence of blocking Jiang Ning.

Especially since he was the Young Master of the Jiang family, Jiang Daoran's very own son!

"I'm just saying," Jiang Daoran was so frustrated. "I know what this fellow is trying to do."

He was obviously trying to groom Lin Yuzhen.

He was trying to make sure that Lin Yuzhen became outstanding enough to rise above Ling'er, the girl who swore to marry nobody else but Jiang Ning at three years old.

The girl who was of high standing in the north and

was admired and respected by so many other young women.

But it was hard to make Ling'er give up on her own accord.

Unless Lin Yuzhen was really more outstanding than Ling'er, that was an impossible task.

Jiang Daoran didn't care about any of this, since that was Jiang Ning's business. What he was angry about now was that he wanted to see Lin Yuzhen but he still needed Jiang Ning's permission.

Jiang Hai breathed a sigh of relief since Jiang Daoran didn't insist.

He picked up the pen and paper that had fallen to the floor and put it back on the table.

He really didn't want to face Jiang Ning again.

The last time he met Jiang Ning at Donghai's airport, he could feel that Jiang Ning was serious about killing him.

Jiang Ning hated the Jiang family and hated Jiang Daoran to the core!

"But I still want to see that girl. If Jiang Ning kills me, then so be it."

Jiang Daoran's sudden remark frightened Jiang Hai so much that his hand shivered and the paper fell onto the floor again.

Jiang Hai gulped and his heart was going to leap out of his mouth.

"Master..." He immediately got down on one knee.

"Master, please reconsider this carefully!"

This wasn't a joke!

Given Jiang Ning's current attitude towards the Jiang family, if Jiang Daoran really dared to meet Lin Yuzhen in private, Jiang Ning would take action and he wouldn't hold back at all.

In this world, as long as Jiang Ning wanted to kill that person, he could definitely kill him!

And because of what happened back then, Jiang Daoran was the one person that Jiang Ning wanted to kill the most!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What are you so nervous about?" Jiang Daoran glanced at Jiang Hai and scoffed quietly. "I just want to see that girl. Who knows? She might really become my daughter-in-law, right? So surely I should at least take a look."

Jiang Hai didn't dare to say anything.

He was going to acknowledge his daughter-in-law before getting his own son to acknowledge him? Jiang Hai was going to faint from fright.

"If Jiang Ning is willing to kill me, then that's also a release for me."

Jiang Daoran said these words with a sigh. He blamed himself and there was also regret in that voice.

He waved his hand. "You can go out."

"Yes Master."

Jiang Hai got up and walked out of the study. He shut the door behind him carefully and exhaled deeply.

This father and son relationship was a real headache.

But he was equally curious about Lin Yuzhen. What was so different about her? How did she make Jiang Ning treat her with such care?

He was curious, but there was no way he was going to Donghai just because he was curious.

If he went, he was definitely going to die.

.....

While all the powerful families in the north were still trying to guess who was behind the commotion in Shenghai.

Jiang Ning had already returned to Donghai.

He didn't care about what was going to happen in Shenghai at all. If the Gao siblings didn't know how to get things done, then he'll find someone else to do the job.

The moment he stepped into the house, he could smell the fragrance of home cooked food.

Jiang Ning had called earlier to tell them what time he would reach home. Su Mei went grocery shopping first thing in the morning.

"Ooh! Smells good!"

Jiang Ning raised an eyebrow and yelled out loudly, "Mum, I'm home!"

"Jiang Ning! You're back!"

Su Mei was still holding a wok spatula in her hand when she ran out of the kitchen. She smiled and said, "Go and take a rest, I'm almost done cooking. I'll call when everything's ready!"

She turned and noticed that Huang Yuming and a few others were behind Jiang Ning.

"All of you! Stay for dinner! There's enough for everyone!"

"Hoho, we're in luck!" Huang Yuming said with a laugh. "I insisted on coming here!"

"Oh no! My pork ribs!"

Su Mei suddenly remembered that she was halfway through frying, and quickly ran back into the kitchen.

Jiang Ning told Huang Yuming and the rest to just make themselves at home while he went upstairs directly.

Lin Yuzhen was sitting in front of the mirror in the room and putting on her makeup.

DOONG DOONG.

Jiang Ning knocked on the door gently. "Wifey, I'm home."

"Oh no..."

Lin Yuzhen quickly got up when she saw that Jiang Ning had pushed the door open already. She hadn't put on lipstick yet.

"Hubby!"

She put her hands behind her back as if she was trying to hide something.

"How's things...how's things in Shenghai?"

Ye Qingwu had already called her to tell her that everything had been solved. She also told her about how Jiang Ning had bought over Star Entertainment, and even teasingly called Lin Yuzhen her lady boss.

"Things went pretty well." Jiang Ning walked over. "What are you hiding behind your back?"

"N-nothing."

Jiang Ning didn't care and stretched his arm over, but all he wanted to do was to pull Lin Yuzhen into

his arms.

"Wifey, I missed you so much."

"Me too."

Lin Yuzhen leaned against Jiang Ning's chest. She had been sleeping alone for several days now and she wasn't used to it.

The feeling of being in Jiang Ning's embrace was so nice.

She was about to say something when she suddenly realized the thing she was holding in her hands had disappeared and Jiang Ning was holding it now.

"Lipstick?" Jiang Ning was surprised. "We're going to eat dinner soon, so why bother with applying lipstick?"

Lin Yuzhen's face immediately turned as red as an apple.

She was very pretty and her skin was as smooth as a baby's. Her bare face was already gorgeous enough to make anyone her age faint.

To Jiang Ning, she was the prettiest and no one else could be compared to her.

"Qingwu gave it to me," Lin Yuzhen bit her lip gently and her voice became even softer. "She said that if a girl applies this particular color, men would want to kiss her even more."

Jiang Ning tried not to laugh.

He placed the lipstick back onto the dressing table, then carried Lin Yuzhen and sat on the bed.

He bent over and kissed her lips without hesitation.

WOONG...

Lin Yuzhen's mind went blank.

"Even without lipstick, I still like to kiss you." Jiang Ning looked at Lin Yuzhen's bashful face. "Original flavor is still the sweetest."

Lin Yuzhen was now overwhelmed by her longing for Jiang Ning.

She looked straight into Jiang Ning's eyes and the sparkle in her eyes was different from before.

If Jiang Ning wanted to go further right now, she wouldn't reject him anymore.

Was this what absence makes the heart grow fonder meant?



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Jiang Ning! Yuzhen! Time to eat!"

Su Mei called out from downstairs.

Lin Yuzhen snapped out of her daze but remained in Jiang Ning's arms.

"Hubby, I want to tell you about something."

Jiang Ning nodded.

"Lin Group has more than 50% of the market share in the southeast region. The sales of our new product has been really shocking, and there are sales channel in Shenghai too."

She looked like a little girl who was hoping for affirmation after getting stellar results. "After much discussion, we've decided that the next city we'll expand into will be Shenghai."

"Oh really?" Jiang Ning had a surprised look on his face. "That's an internationally renowned city!"

"Yup!"

Lin Yuzhen was even happier to see Jiang Ning's expression. "This is highly classified and very few people know about this plan, so don't tell anybody else, ok?"

If Lin Group could become a reputable company in Shenghai, that would be a huge advancement for the company.

It was different from just staying in the southeast region and expanding along the coastline.

In order to take this step, you needed both the ability as well as the courage!

"Wifey, you're amazing!" Jiang Ning kissed her again. "You're totally my idol."

His words were dripping with honey and they were so sweet that Lin Yuzhen felt embarrassed. Her face and neck was all red and she wondered if the rest might misunderstand when she went down for dinner.

At the dining table.

Lin Yuzhen kept her head bowed and just ate without talking. Su Mei reached out to touch her forehead.

"What's wrong? Why is your face so red?"

"Nothing, it's just very warm these days."

"It is getting quite warm these days, and it's nearly summer. Su Yun is going to take her exams soon." Su Mei laughed and said, "Oh by the way, your grandma and the rest want to come and visit us tomorrow. Your uncle called this morning to let me know."

Lin Yuzhen looked up when she heard this.

"Since we've moved into a new house, it's only right for them to come over for a meal and have a chat with us. We're all relatives after all."

Su Mei knew that Lin Yuzhen had gotten very angry the last time she went to visit these relatives. She only got along well with Su Gang's family, but she really didn't want to have anything to do with the rest, like Su Hong and family.

But Su Mei was a traditional sort of woman and to her, blood was thicker than water. She was filial to

her parents and respected her older siblings.

"Yup, we should have them over. Since Mum has already thought it through, then they can come over," Jiang Ning gently took Lin Yuzhen's hand and smiled. "Need me to arrange for someone to pick them up?"

"Oh no no!" Su Mei quickly replied. "They'll take the bus over themselves. Your uncle doesn't want to trouble you, he said so many times."

"We're all family, it's no trouble."

Jiang Ning turned to Huang Yuming and Huang Yuming immediately nodded.

"I'll settle this."

"I'm so sorry to trouble you."

Su Mei felt bad about it.

She was relieved to see that Jiang Ning wasn't angry.

The last time Jiang Ning and Lin Yuzhen went to visit her relatives, they had an unpleasant experience there and she was afraid that Jiang Ning would feel upset about having them over. But her mother had called and said she wanted to come over, so Su Mei felt that she couldn't reject her own mother.

Lin Wen had even nearly quarreled with her over this earlier, saying that she hadn't considered Jiang Ning's feelings.

After dinner, Huang Yuming immediately left to arrange for this.

Lin Yuzhen went back to the room and looked rather unhappy.

"Can't you tell that my First Aunt is obviously the one instigating all of this?"

She was a kind person, but she still had a temper. Her family had been bullied so badly by Su Hong for so many years, and now they still had to be nice and polite to her.

Goodness knows what other reason they had for coming here.

Lin Yuzhen had no issues if Su Gang and his family wanted to visit. But she really didn't like her eldest aunt.

"Didn't you see that Mum was put in a spot?" Jiang Ning smiled. "What's a little suffering to me? As long as it doesn't make things difficult for Mum."

"I really suspect you're her biological son!"

Lin Yuzhen scoffed and ignored Jiang Ning. She turned and sat down at her desk to sort out some documents.

The next step in Lin Group's plan was to enter the huge city of Shenghai.

This step was very important!

If they could stabilize themselves in this large city, then even more opportunities would open for Lin Group.

Lin Yuzhen placed great importance on this plan and had put in a lot of effort into making it possible. She already had more than ten meetings with the

company directors over this matter.

She was going to use the fact that the new product was a bestseller to enter Shenghai's market. Besides, the spokesperson, Ye Qingwu, was already based in Shenghai.

Lin Yuzhen didn't want to miss such a good chance.

On top of that, she heard that Shenghai was a complicated city and the various powers at work in the city were fairly strong, so it was very difficult for a brand to gain a foothold without relying on any of these existing powers.

But no matter how difficult it was going to be, Lin Yuzhen was very determined to take this step!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

She hadn't forgotten about that very, very outstanding girl who might come to snatch her husband away anytime.

Lin Yuzhen wasn't going to let that happen.

When Jiang Ning saw how Lin Yuzhen was behaving like a child, he just laughed and didn't say anything. He didn't interrupt her and walked out of the room.

Of course Jiang Ning knew why Su Mei's relatives wanted to come.

Lin Group was now expanding at a rapid speed and Lin Group was the most famous company in all of Donghai. It didn't matter whether you lived in the city, the countryside or even a village – anyone with a child working in Lin Group would celebrate.

Su Hong had insisted that her mother with mobility problems come to visit the Lin family. Even an idiot could tell what she was after.

Su Mei was watching TV on the sofa in the living room.

When she saw Jiang Ning come downstairs, she looked up and asked, "Is Yuzhen busy?"

"Yup. She's working on the company expansion plans. They're very important so I don't want to disturb her."

"Come over here and sit down with me."

Su Mei pushed the tidbits to Jiang Ning, then picked up an apple and said, "I'll pare an apple for you."

"Thanks Mum."

Jiang Ning sat down and leaned back on the sofa. He had a tired expression and he frowned as he massaged his own temples and exhaled deeply.

He looked like he had just travelled a few thousand miles earlier. His eyes were bloodshot and he was exhausted.

"Are you very tired?" Su Mei felt her heart go out to him.

Jiang Ning had contributed so much to the family.

If not for Jiang Ning, her family would probably never have the chance to live so happily.

"A little," Jiang Ning squeezed a smile out. "But as long as our family is happy, all the work is worth it."

"You're such a good boy."

Su Mei felt tears come to her eyes.

"I used to hate seeing you so much, do you think..."

"That was because you didn't understand what sort of person I was and you were afraid I would bully Yuzhen. Now you know all about me, and you know only Yuzhen gets to bully me," said Jiang Ning with a laugh.

"She wouldn't dare!" Su Mei scoffed. "If Yuzhen bullies you, tell me and I'll teach her a lesson!"

Jiang Ning burst out laughing. He wondered if Lin Yuzhen was sneezing away now.

"Did you meet with any trouble when you went to Shenghai?"

"A little," Jiang Ning sighed. "Lin Group wants to expand, and they'll have to enter a big city like Shengcheng sooner or later. I went to test the market there and I accidentally offended some people."

Su Mei's expression immediately became nervous.

"Lin Group has been able to expand so quickly and so well only because Dad and Yuzhen have both put in so much effort. Look at Yuzhen – after she gets home, she still has to work till so late," said Jiang Ning with an upset voice. "I want to help to share her burden, and I won't be afraid even if there are twenty or thirty people running after me to beat me up."

If the Gao siblings heard this, they would have fallen to their knees in shock. Who dared to run after Jiang Ning to beat him up?

That was basically suicide.

But when Su Mei heard these words, she felt her heart tremble.

"So many people ran after you to beat you up? Are you hurt anywhere?" asked Su Mei anxiously as she hurriedly stood up to check.

"Don't worry, I'm a fast runner."

Jiang Ning even looked like he was still scared.

"That's how it is in business, and you'll definitely end up offending some people along the way. But Lin Group is Yuzhen's dream, so I want to make it come true for her and I don't want others to dash her dreams."

He looked at Su Mei and shook his head. "Mum, you don't know about this, but there was a director in the office who went against the rules and secretly arranged for his younger sister to join the company, so she didn't have to do anything and still got paid. It impacted the company negatively and even affected one of the company's projects. Yuzhen was so angry, she kept crying."

Su Mei never asked about company matters. Lin Wei and Lin Yuzhen wouldn't tell her either, since Su Mei was always focused on taking care of the home.

But after hearing all this from Jiang Ning, she realized that her family was working very hard and it was tough to weather all these storms.

She definitely wouldn't allow anyone to destroy any of this. She wasn't going to let anyone affect the bliss that her family deserved.

"Mum, don't worry, I'm young, so I'll be ok after a good night's rest."

Jiang Ning saw that Su Mei had finished paring the apple, so he took it from her and started eating it. "Mum, go to bed early. I'll go to bed after eating the apple too, I'm a little sleepy."

He then ate the apple and dragged his heavy footsteps up the stairs at the same time.

Su Mei felt her heart ache as she saw how exhausted Jiang Ning looked.

Meanwhile.

At Su Hong's house.

She was rummaging through her closet and there was glee written all over her face.

"Which dress looks nicer on me?"

Su Hong stood in front of the mirror and put one dress after another against herself.

"We're not attending some banquet, why do you bother at all."

Xu Ming snorted loudly.

He had been so shocked by Lin Yuzhen the last time. He never expected Lin Group to be doing so well now. Even those high ranking government officials were so polite to Lin Yuzhen.

He thought that he would get a dressing down when he went to work, but the highest ranking official of his office actually came over to say hello to him the next day!



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"What do you know." Su Hong rolled her eyes at him.

"Su Mei's amazing now, and that Lin Group is even more amazing now! Didn't you hear? Their new product keeps selling out! I can't get it in this city at all!"

"This Lin Group is going to become a multinational company someday!"

Xu Ming made a face and wanted to say that this had nothing to do with Su Hong. Clearly Su Hong had never thought this day would come when she was saying all those nasty things about Su Mei back then.

"If our son can get into Lin Group, then his future would certainly be bright!"

Su Hong's eyes were smiling as she talked about this. She had gone to talk to her mother so many times about this matter, and her mother had finally given in and agreed to go to Donghai with them.

"Given our son's ability, Su Mei has to at least allow him to be a VP in the company, right?"

Su Hong had thought about this for a long time already.

Her son always seemed to be so free and he wasn't at a very good company either, so how much could he earn every year?

If Su Hong and Xu Ming hadn't saved up enough themselves, they wouldn't have the money for him to get married or to buy a car.

Now that Su Mei's family was doing well, then she would definitely help her sisters out.

Lin Group was such a huge company now. Everyone in Donghai gave a thumbs up when there was any mention of Lin Group.

Lin Group's salary and benefits were excellent, and their reputation was even more admirable. If anyone had a child who got into Lin Group, the family would throw a big party and light fireworks to celebrate.

"That part is true," Xu Ming laughed. "Given our son's ability, I don't think it's a problem for him to be a VP. His annual salary would be at least a million dollars, right?"

"How could that be?" Su Hong glared at him. "It would be at least three million dollars!"

"That's my biological sister we're talking about! Can our relationship with Su Mei be compared with other people?"

Xu Ming nodded.

During this time, he had also benefitted from being related to Su Mei's family. Even those government officials who never cared about his existence before were being polite to him now.

He thought about it for a while, then said, "But you made Yuzhen so unhappy the last time, would she agree?"

Lin Yuzhen was the CEO of Lin Group, so surely she had a say in this.

"It's not up to her!" Su Hong scoffed. "Once Su Mei gives the go ahead, then Lin Wen and Lin Yuzhen won't say anything. You think I don't know those two? They listen to everything Su Mei says!"

"Besides, my mum is going along as well. If my mum asks, you think Su Mei will dare to disagree? She's always listened to everything the old lady says!"

Once she could secure the support of Su Mei, then everything would go as planned.

The more she thought about it, the happier she became. She started humming to herself and could already imagine how envious and jealous her neighbours would be if they found out that her son was working for Lin Group.

He was going to be a VP in Lin Group!

They could throw their weight about after that! Humph!

Su Hong nearly couldn't fall asleep at night. She just felt that time was passing very slowly. Every time she opened her eyes again, she would get upset when she realized it wasn't morning yet. She couldn't wait.

Su Hong woke up very early the next morning.

She changed into the long red dress that she had carefully chosen the night before to make herself look a little classier.

Even Xu Ming changed into a brand new suit and leather shoes.

Since they were the parents of a VP at Lin Group, then they had to make sure they dressed the part.

She yelled her son, Xu Ran, out of bed. "Do you know what time is it? Why are you still sleeping?! Hurry up and get up! Pick your grandma up! We're going to

Donghai! We're going to make sure you get to be a VP!"

They drove to Su Gang's place.

Su Hong got out in a great hurry and ran into the house.

Xu Ming remained standing at the car and adjusted his tie slightly. He was afraid that walking too much would dirty his leather shoes. They wouldn't look nice anymore if they were dirtied.

"Mum! MUM!" Su Hong yelled very loudly. "I've come to pick you up!"

Grandma Su always woke up very early. She had gotten dressed and packed, and looked quite alert.

She had heard all about how Su Mei's family now lived in a huge bungalow from Su Hong, but she didn't intend to visit them since she was getting on in age and she had trouble walking.

But since Su Hong was coming to fetch her, then she thought she should visit.

She was more than happy to see that her children were doing well.

"You're here," Grandma Su smiled. "I was waiting for you to come over."

Su Gang and his wife walked out when they heard the commotion. Su Yun rubbed her eyes and yawned as she walked out of her room.

It was only 7AM. Who on earth visited others at this hour?

"Sis," Su Gang greeted her.

"Su Gang, I've come to pick Mum up. We don't have anymore space in the car, so your family can take the bus."



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Su Hong turned to Su Gang and said this very casually.

In fact, she didn't even intend to ask Su Gang's family along, since they didn't have anything to do with her family.

But Grandma Su had insisted that they all go together because it was only right for the siblings to visit one another.

Su Gang didn't say anything when he heard this. He had already guessed as much anyway.

This eldest sister of his was probably afraid that he would dirty her car.

Su Hong left with the old lady and drove off in no time.

"Pack your things, we've got to catch the bus."

Su Gang's wife shrugged. She didn't care. "I made some pickled radish. Su Mei loves these pickled things, so I'll bring them over."

She was about to pack the food when she suddenly stopped and said worriedly, "Do you think she would look down on this sort of food now?"

The Lin family now wasn't that poor family that had trouble making ends meet anymore.

"Don't overthink it. Even if others look down on this food, Su Mei won't," replied Su Gang. "Bring everything, Su Mei has been asking about it several times already."

"Alright then!"

Su Yun yawned and made a face when she saw how easily pleased her mother was.

"Dad, I'll get changed. Wait for me."

"Hurry up, we have to catch the bus."

"Got it."

Su Gang was also a little perplexed by this situation. He didn't want to disturb Su Mei actually. It was so troublesome to take care of so many of them at one shot.

He was already happy to see that Su Mei and her family were living well. He never thought of giving her trouble just because she was living well. But his mother insisted that he went along, so he didn't dare to argue with her.

But for them to get to Donghai, they had to take the public bus, then an intercity bus, then change public buses twice before they could reach Su Mei's new house.

"We should just get a cab all the way there, no point in saving this bit of money," thought Su Gang to himself.

Just when they had finished packing, a car honked at their door.

Su Gang walked out when he heard the honking sound. He saw a black car parked at his door, and he knew at one glance that this car had to be very expensive!

"Are you Mr Su Gang?"

"Yes yes, that's right, I'm Su Gang. Hello hello, you

are...?"

Su Gang ran over and pulled a pack of cigarettes out from his pocket, forgetting that it was a cheap brand and this person might look down on them since he was driving such a nice car.

But Brother Gou's eyes lit up the moment he saw the cigarettes. "OH! It's been a long time since I had a smoke. Thanks Uncle Su!"

After he followed Jiang Ning around, Huang Yuming didn't allow any of them to smoke because Lin Yuzhen didn't like the smell of cigarettes, so Brother Gou quit as quickly as possible.

But he couldn't resist taking one. He thanked Su Gang profusely. "Uncle Su, could I borrow a lighter? I don't have one on me anymore."

Su Gang was surprised at how polite Brother Gou was, and quickly lit the cigarette for him.

"Big Boss told me to come over to pick you up, is everyone ready to go?"

Brother Gou finished his cigarette and stood where the wind was blowing the hardest. He hoped the wind could blow away any tobacco smell on him, otherwise Huang Yuming was going to nag his ear off.

"We're ready! We're ready!" Su Gang was a little apologetic. "I'm so sorry that you had to come all the way here to pick us up, we've really given Jiang Ning trouble again."

"Don't say that. Big Boss said that you're family, so it's no trouble."

Su Yun and her mother had gotten changed and walked out with some things meant for Su Mei's family.

Su Yun's mother was speechless when she saw the beautiful car waiting outside the door. Jiang Ning was too kind to them!

"Hello Brother Gou!"

Su Yun wasn't formal around Brother Gou at all and immediately greeted him. She clasped her hands together politely and said in a very stern voice, "Su Yun, Legend of Shengcheng, greets Brother Gou!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

What was this Legend of Shengcheng about?

Su Gang and his wife were both stunned by this. Since when did Su Yun have such a nickname? This child really had no manners and was spouting nonsense now.

"Greetings to the Legend of Shengcheng!"

But Brother Gou also clasped his hands in return and greeted her in an equally solemn voice.

Su Yun then broke into a smile as she hopped into the car happily. Only Su Gang and his wife had no idea what was going on.

When did this silly girl become a legend?

And supposedly Shengcheng's? Other people would laugh if they heard her.

They certainly didn't know that Su Yun's name was one that nobody in Shengcheng's illegal circle dared to offend, and was to be treated as an honored guest by anyone keeping the order in each district.

The two got into the car cautiously. They were much more careful compared to Su Yun, and were really afraid of damaging the real leather seats of the car.

At the same time.

In the Lin family bungalow.

Su Mei had woken up early in the morning to go grocery shopping. She went out as quietly as possible because she was afraid of waking Jiang Ning up.

When she thought about how tired Jiang Ning

looked the night before, she felt so bad for her son-in-law.

She decided to make some nourishing soup for him since he was home so as to help him feel more refreshed.

In a bedroom upstairs.

Jiang Ning was already awake. He looked lovingly at Lin Yuzhen as she continued to sleep as her lips twitched slightly.

She seemed to sense that someone was looking at her, so Lin Yuzhen slowly opened her eyes.

Her long eyelashes were like a windscreen wiper that made her sleepy eyes see more clearly.

"What time is it now?" she asked while yawning.

"It's late enough for the sun to shine in," Jiang Ning pointed at how the sunshine had hit the bed through the window. "They're probably almost here."

Lin Yuzhen made a face when she heard this. She was still upset that Jiang Ning wasn't on her side the night before.

"You know how that First Aunt of mine is," Lin Yuzhen whined. "She doesn't do anything for nothing. She's brought my grandmother along, so she's definitely up to something. My mum would be in a tougher situation when that happens!"

She knew Su Hong's family well, and understood her own mother well too.

No matter what request Su Hong's family made, as long as her grandmother put in a good word for

them, Su Mei wouldn't be able to turn them down.

She was always so softhearted.

"Then? Your grandmother wants to visit us, so surely we can't turn her down, right?" Jiang Ning laughed and gently patted Lin Yuzhen's head.

"Alright now, don't worry. Mum knows what to do, it'll be fine."

"Hurry up and wash up. Don't tell me you want them to see how messy your hair is and how filthy your face is, right?"

"What?"

Lin Yuzhen sat up immediately. Was her hair messy and her face dirty?

Was she such a mess when she slept?!

She dashed into the bathroom to wash up.

After a while, the security guards outside reported that someone wanted to come in and asked if the family knew them.

After getting permission from the owner, Su Hong's car was allowed into the estate.

"So this is what a bungalow estate looks like!" Su Hong's eyes lit up. "It'll be great if we could live in such a place!"

"The bungalows here are very expensive. Each one is at least \$10 million."

Xu Ming took a deep breath.

He had checked the prices on the internet. The

property prices in Donghai didn't go up and it never would, but this sort of bungalow was a status symbol in the first place, so there was no way the price would be low.

"At least \$10 million? Su Mei's family is filthy rich now!"

If she knew that the entire estate was bought by Jiang Ning, she might have been too shocked to speak.

Su Hong gasped and thought to herself, "Once my son becomes a VP, then we could buy one in a few years too!"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Mum, do you see that?" Su Hong pulled on her mother's arm and pointed to the bungalows in the distance. "Su Mei lives in this sort of place now!"

Grandma Su smiled and nodded. "Good, good, as long as she's living well."

"You should move over too!" Su Hong rolled her eyes. "What's the point in living with Su Gang? That old house of his is so small! I'll talk to Su Mei about this. Now that she's rich, she doesn't know how to take care of her mother anymore. I'll help you criticize her."

When the car drove to the first bungalow and saw the BMWs parked there, Su Hong knew they had arrived at the right place.

She got Xu Ran to stop the car. She helped her mother out of the car and started shouting very loudly.

"Su Mei! Mum is here! Aren't you coming out to fetch her?!"

She helped the old lady along as she continued to grumble, "This Su Mei is putting on airs now that she's rich. She's terrible, can't even come out to fetch her mum now."

Su Hong had reached the door when Su Mei walked out of the kitchen.

It couldn't be helped. The house was so large, it took time to walk from the kitchen to the door.

"Mum!" Su Mei greeted her and immediately went to help her mother since she had trouble walking. "I haven't seen you in so long."

"Come in!"

Grandma Su smiled and nodded.

The moment they walked in, Su Hong's family was stunned.

This bungalow was huge!

Her house was about 1300 square feet and that wasn't too bad. But Su Mei's bungalow had to be at least 3200 square feet.

And it was a triple story bungalow!

Even though Xu Ming had seen his fair share of fancy houses, this sort of bungalow still made his head spin.

He knew very well that anyone who could live in such a place was definitely very wealthy and it was beyond his imagination.

But once his son got into Lin Group and earned three million a year plus some additional benefits, they could move into a house like that in two years.

"We could just buy the one next door, it looks pretty good too," thought Xu Ming to himself.

"What a large TV! It's got to be at least a hundred inches in diameter, right?!"

Su Hong behaved like she had never seen anything modern in her entire life. She was making a lot of noise about the TV, called the automated air conditioning amazing and was all excited about the elevator, the crystal chandelier...

Her eyes were so bright and she wished this was

her home!

"This chandelier is not bad. We should buy one like this too, the exact same one!"

Su Mei ignored her and helped her mother to take a seat. She poured some water for everyone, and a servant came to serve fruits and drinks.

"Where's my brother?"

She thought Su Gang's family was coming together with them.

"They're taking the bus, so they'll probably only arrive around lunch." Su Hong added on, "Anyway they're just here to get a free lunch."

She scoffed and started grumbling about how they weren't supposed to come anyway.

By the time Su Gang and family arrived, they might have even finished eating. Were they going to come in time to wash the dishes?

Su Mei glanced at her and didn't look too kindly. Who talked about their own family like that?

If Su Gang's family wasn't coming, she wasn't going to let Su Hong's family come.

Just as they were talking about this, there was a honk from outside. Su Mei's face lit up. "My brother must have arrived."

She quickly walked out.

"How can that be? They're taking the bus, so they can't be that fast."

She burst out laughing. "Even after they reach Donghai, they still have to change to another bus, so they won't be so...fast..."

Su Hong walked with Su Mei to the door and cut her own sentence off.

Su Gang and family had just alighted from a car that even Su Hong could tell was a luxury car.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Su Gang!" Su Mei was full of smiles as she quickly walked over. "You're all here!"

"Third Aunt!" Su Yun greeted her sweetly. "Has Yuzhen woken up?"

"She's up, go look for her."

Su Yun nodded and ran right in without hesitation.

"This child really has no manners," Su Gang shook his head and looked at his wife. "You've spoiled her rotten!"

Su Gang's wife, Yang Li, looked a little apologetically back at her husband. She suddenly remembered she still had things in the trunk, so she got Brother Gou to open the trunk and took out all the pickled radish she had brought.

"Your brother said you love eating it, so I made some for you to try."

When the Lin family was doing badly, Su Gang had visited Su Mei twice. Besides bringing some money over, he had brought these pickled radishes along too.

They weren't worth much money, but Su Mei always remembered this.

She quickly took it and hugged the box of pickled radish. "Thank you so much, Yang Li! I've missed these pickled radishes so much and I tried making them myself, but they never tasted quite right! You have to teach me later!"

"Sure! Sure!" Yang Li replied happily.

She was still worried that Su Mei might look down

on them.

"Don't just stand there, come on in!" said Su Mei.

Su Hong stood at the door and wrinkled her nose. She thought that Su Gang's family had brought something fancy, but it turned out to be just picked radishes. How much was that worth?

She couldn't believe they actually dared to bring something like that.

She had forgotten that she hadn't even brought a single thing, and only brought this foul mouth of hers.

Su Gang and his wife were shocked by the house the moment they stepped in.

This bungalow was too huge!

Both of them looked very cautious and didn't even know which direction to start walking in.

"Make yourselves at home," Su Mei said with a smile. "Take a seat, I'll start cooking, Lin Wen will be back soon."

After Su Mei disappeared into the kitchen, Su Gang and Yang Li carefully sat down on the sofa and touched the real leather sofa. Their cautiousness made Su Hong and Xu Ming laugh.

"Su Gang, don't look as though you've never seen the world before," Su Hong laughed. "This is Su Mei's house, so you can treat it like your own."

She hadn't behaved very differently from Su Gang earlier either.

"When my family buys a bungalow in the future, you can come over and visit us too."

Su Gang didn't say anything, but Yang Li couldn't resist the urge.

"Su Hong, are you going to buy a bungalow? That's amazing."

"I heard that the cemetery near your place has been developed into a bungalow estate, but nobody has bought them yet. I don't think they're too expensive, so you can consider."

"Why, you!" Su Hong immediately flared up. "What nonsense are you talking about?! If we want to buy a house, we'll buy the best!"

She scoffed and then turned to whisper to her mother, "Mum, remember to mention what I told you earlier. This concerns your grandson's future, his life!"

Grandma Su smiled and nodded.

Upstairs, Lin Yuzhen had just gotten changed and twirled in front of Jiang Ning.

"Is this dress nice?"

"Nice."

Jiang Ning held Lin Yuzhen's hands and pulled her into his arms. "Everything my wife wears is nice."

"Yuzhen!"

The door was flung open immediately after it was knocked. Su Yun darted in like a rabbit only to see Jiang Ning hugging Lin Yuzhen.

She quickly covered her eyes with her hands. "Sorry! Sorry! Brother-in-law! I didn't know you were around!"

Su Yun slowly peeked through her fingers to find that the two of them were still fully clothed and she was a little disappointed.

"You terrible girl! How dare you barge into my room!" Lin Yuzhen jumped out of Jiang Ning's embrace and her face was all red as she threatened Su Yun, "I'm going to tell your mum!"

"Nooooo! Yuzhen! Let me off! I've always barged into your room like this since we were kids!"

This was already her habit, even though Lin Yuzhen was already married and she totally forgot. "Look, even my brother-in-law isn't angry, so you can't be angry, right?"

She grinned and knew that Jiang Ning had a good temper and wouldn't be angry with her.

"You're the Legend of Shengcheng, I wouldn't dare to offend you," Jiang Ning said with a laugh. "Let's go downstairs and chat later. It's time to eat."

After he walked out, Su Yun immediately hooked Lin Yuzhen's arm and whispered, "Yuzhen, are you expecting?"

"Expecting what?"

"A child! Haven't you two already...you know? How does it feel?"

"You terrible girl! I'm going to tear your mouth off!"

.....



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

Jiang Ning went downstairs and greeted everyone one by one.

He was just as polite towards Su Hong and her family, and didn't take what happened the last time to heart at all.

"Jiang Ning, you are really too kind and even got Gou to fetch us, we've really given you trouble," Su Gang quickly thanked him.

Su Hong didn't like hearing this at all.

Why had Jiang Ning only arranged to pick Su Gang's family and not hers?

If Jiang Ning had arranged for such a fancy car to pick her family up, her neighbors would definitely envy her.

She had just checked with her son. That car was worth at least \$3 million!

"Gou is good friends with Su Yun. Once he heard that Su Yun was coming, he wanted to fetch you guys, so it's no trouble at all."

Su Hong threw a glance at Jiang Ning. All this was because Lin Yuzhen was capable and it had nothing to do with this son-in-law who had married into the family.

But of course, she kept a smile on her face.

"Jiang Ning, I heard that Lin Group is advancing well and it's very famous in the southeast region."

"That's right. Yuzhen has worked very hard and reaped some results."

Su Hong's smile became brighter.

"What position are you holding in Lin Group?"

She had to make sure that her son's position wouldn't be lower than this leech.

"Me? I don't work for Lin Group," Jiang Ning shrugged and looked helpless. "I can't do any of the work in Lin Group."

Su Hong called him useless in her heart and her expression changed slightly. Why did she bother asking Jiang Ning?

"That's true, you're not very well educated and I don't think you have a degree even, right? It is a little hard for you to work in Lin Group then," said Su Hong as she nodded as if she was in deep thought.

Su Gang started angry when he heard these words.

They were guests in Jiang Ning's house, so how could she say something like that?

He was about to say something when Yang Li held him back. She shook her head slightly to tell him not to be rash.

Hadn't Su Hong suffered enough embarrassment after she humiliated Jiang Ning the last time?

She didn't think Jiang Ning was a pushover.

"First Aunt, you're right. Lin Group's hiring process is now very strict, and it's hard even for those with a degree," replied Jiang Ning calmly. "If you're not an outstanding talent, Lin Group wouldn't want you, no matter who you are."

Su Hong's expression changed a little because she could hear what Jiang Ning was implying. He was clearly telling her to stop trying.

She quickly threw Xu Ming a glance. Xu Ming straightened up a little and coughed twice.

"While that does sound reasonable enough, it's not up to to decide who gets hired in Lin Group, right?" He looked at Jiang Ning with a smile, but there was disdain in his eyes. "Lin Wen and company wouldn't allow an outsider like you to decide on something so important, right?"

"I think you're the outsider!"

Before Jiang Ning could say anything, he heard an authoritative and angry voice.

Lin Wen walked in with large strides and passed his bag to Number 3, then walked over to Xu Ming. He was no longer that cripple who used to be wheelchair bound anymore, so the way he carried himself was different now.

His eyes were sharp as he glared at Xu Ming. Xu Ming started to feel a little panicky and immediately stood up.

"Jiang Ning is not an outsider. He is my son-in-law and a son to the Lin family!" Lin Wen declared loudly and sounded incredibly stern. "Who dares to treat him as an outsider?!"

Xu Ming smiled awkwardly.

"Lin Wen, don't be angry, that's not what I meant," he quickly explained. "You've misunderstood me."

Xu Ming thought that when he said Jiang Ning was

an outsider, Lin Wen thought that Xu Ming looked down on the Lin family. But of course he didn't dare to look down on the Lin family now.

He just thought that since Jiang Ning married into the family, he didn't have any position in the family, so naturally, he had no say in the company either.

"Oh really? Then what did you mean?" Lin Wen scoffed and looked at Xu Ming.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

The air instantly became very tense.

Nobody had seen Lin Wen angry before.

Lin Wen used to be wheelchair bound and didn't seem to have any life in him. At most he would just nod, but he hardly even spoke.

Even when Su Gang came to visit twice, Lin Wen only took his hand and said thank you and nothing more.

But they could sense that Lin Wen was really angry this time.

"Lin Group is getting larger by the day, so every decision is a big decision. Aren't all big decisions made by you and Yuzhen?"

Xu Ming put on his best smile and didn't have any of those airs anymore.

He had come here with a request, so he didn't dare to go too far.

"Jiang Ning doesn't work at Lin Group, so isn't it too much to ask of him to make such decisions?"

Xu Ming immediately changed his way of speaking.

He quickly turned to look at Jiang Ning. "Jiang Ning, don't misunderstand, that's not what I meant. I'm not looking down on you."

Jiang Ning just smiled and didn't say anything.

Xu Ming's disdain was pretty much written on his face, it was just that Jiang Ning wasn't bothered.

This sort of small fry couldn't make his emotions

waver at all.

"Then remember this well. Jiang Ning is my son-in-law and he's Yuzhen's husband. He's the most important person to the Lin family." Lin Wen's voice got louder and louder.

He couldn't hold it in anymore.

They were now in his house and not in Xu Ming's house. How dare they look down on Jiang Ning! Did they even have the right to?

Lin Wen would have chased them out if he didn't have to consider how awkward it might become for Su Mei.

What nonsense was this!

"Of course, of course, how could anyone chosen by the Lin family be anyone bad?" Xu Ming just laughed along.

But he was annoyed at how Lin Wen could now simply flare up because he was rich now. To him, Lin Wen was just using this opportunity to act all high and mighty and get back at all the times Xu Ming's family had insulted him.

Lin Wen had even made Jiang Ning grateful to him now. What was this even.

Xu Ming did a lot of scheming at work and had seen his fair share. There was no way he was going to believe anything Lin Wen said.

How could a man who married into the family be the most important person to the family?

That was ridiculous.

"Do you have to speak so loudly?" Grandma Su covered her ears. "You all sound like you're quarreling."

"Mum, I'm sorry. I got angry earlier and lost control."

Lin Wen nodded.

He glanced at Jiang Ning to tell him not to take it personally.

Jiang Ning nodded in acknowledgment.

One Xu Ming wasn't fit to make him angry.

"Lin Wen, you're really different from before."

Su Hong's eyes lit up when she saw how Lin Wen was all decked out in a branded suit. Since the decision maker was here and her mother was also here and they had reached this topic, wasn't this the perfect opportunity?

"You're really like the Chairman of a large company!" Su Hong smiled and looked at him expectantly. "So I'm sure you have the final say in Lin Group, right?"

Lin Wen didn't like Su Hong very much. He just nodded and didn't want to talk too much to her.

"So are you in charge of Lin Group's hiring process?"

Su Hong got even more excited.

"I oversee the hiring of management roles, HR takes care of the rest."

Lin Wen greeted Su Gang and his wife, but Su Hong kept asking him questions. He was annoyed with her but didn't show it.

Su Hong broke into a bright smile when she heard these words. She was just short of applauding.

Lin Wen oversaw the management roles!

Her son was going to join Lin Group as a VP, so that was definitely part of management!

"It's like that, Brother-in-law," Su Hong even called him differently now. She smiled and said, "My son, Xu Ran, is all grown up now... Xu Ran! Why are you still sitting there? Greet your Third Uncle!"

"Hello Third Uncle!" Xu Ran immediately greeted Lin Wen politely after standing up.

Lin Wen nodded.

"This son of mine hasn't been able to find a good job after graduating from university, and never got a chance to display his full potential," Su Hong sighed and glanced at her mother. She went straight to the point, "Aren't there any positions in Lin Group that are suitable for him?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

This was why Su Hong had come today.

Lin Wen laughed coldly in his heart and exchanged glances with Jiang Ning. Now he suddenly knew what Xu Ming was talking about when he said that Jiang Ning was an outsider with no right to make decisions.

Jiang Ning didn't say anything. He was just amused and already saw this coming.

He wasn't worried about Lin Wen. Lin Wen would never give in to Su Hong's request.

He had already prepared Su Mei beforehand, so he was pretty sure Su Hong was going to go back disappointed.

"Then what position do you think is suitable for Xu Ran?" Lin Wen asked in return.

Su Hong and Xu Ming broke into a big smile when they heard this.

Lin Wen was letting them choose?

Even Xu Ran gulped when he heard this. If he could really become a VP, he couldn't imagine what it was like to earn a million a year!

"Since our families are related and Su Mei is my sister," said Su Hong rather excitedly. "Yuzhen is the CEO, so Xu Ran should be at least a Vice President position, right? Don't you think so, Brother-in-law?"

Su Gang was shocked. He never expected Su Hong to have fooled his mother into coming because of something like that. She was trying to use her connections to get Xu Ran a job in Lin Group.

And she even asked for the position of VP straight up?

She was nuts!

But Su Gang and his wife didn't say anything. It wasn't their place to say anything. He only hoped that Lin Wen's family wouldn't get goaded into doing what Su Hong wanted.

"VP?" Lin Wen frowned. "That's not enough."

He shook his head.

Su Hong's family got even more excited now.

A VP position wasn't enough?

Lin Wen was really easy to manipulate!

If that wasn't enough, then what other higher position was there for Xu Ran?

There weren't too many positions that had high salary with nothing much to do, was there?

"Is there an even higher position?" Xu Ming couldn't help asking. He was getting so excited.

"Of course," Lin Wen replied calmly. "There's always the position of Chairman. Tell you what, I'll retire, and let your son be the Chairman. How's that?"

Su Hong felt her brain explode with happiness, then she asked suspiciously, "Are you just kidding with me?"

"You started the joke."

Lin Wen scoffed. He felt like he had heard the

biggest joke in his life.

Didn't they know what their own son was capable of?

They wanted him to be a VP immediately? What did they take Lin Group as?

What a joke!

Su Hong's face reddened in anger when she understood what Lin Wen was trying to say and she replied with displeasure in her voice, "What do you mean by that? If Xu Ran joins Lin Group, then he will be contributing to your company too. We're all one family, so why are you being so petty?"

Lin Wen was so angry he laughed.

Jiang Ning was even more speechless now. How did Su Hong find it in herself to say something like that?

Su Gang and his wife were completely stunned. Which decent human being said such things?

When the Lin family was down and out, Su Hong never treated them as family and never helped them. On the contrary, she even said many nasty things about Lin Wen.

And now that she wanted them to do her a favor, they were suddenly family?

"Exactly! Su Mei and Su Hong are sisters! Blood is thicker than water! Xu Ran is also your nephew!" Xu Ming started sounding angry. "What's wrong with being a VP? You think Xu Ran isn't up to it? How could that be?"

Lin Wen looked at them and didn't want to say anymore. He waved his hands and said, "If he wants to join the company, he can submit his resume. If he's good enough for the company, he will become part of us. There's no point in trying any other methods. I will not let anyone in through the back door."

"Lin Wen, why are you like this?" Su Hong started getting anxious.

There was no way Xu Ran could get in the normal way. Xu Ran only graduated from vocational school and not university, so it was even more impossible.

If he was really capable, she wouldn't have to resort to this method.

"Mum, look at him! We're all one family but he refuses to help!"

Su Hong quickly thought of her trump card and tugged Grandma Su's arm and looked all upset. "It's just a position in the company, so what's the big deal? Aren't you going to care about your grandson's future?"

Lin Wen shook his head and couldn't believe Su Hong sometimes.

He didn't want to fall out with this family, but it seemed like this family didn't care.

"Lin Wen, doesn't your company need people?"

The old lady had been persuaded by Su Hong long ago. She was more than happy to help her grandson out since it concerned his future.

Since Su Hong and Xu Ming's words didn't work,

Grandma Su had to ask. "It's just a job, so you can just say the word, right?"



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!

"Mum, every company has its own rules. If everyone goes by the back door, then I might as well shut the company down."

Lin Wen didn't mince his words.

"What do you mean by that?" Su Hong got anxious. "Lin Wen, you're too petty! I won't talk to you about this anymore!"

"Su Mei! Su Mei!"

She started shouting for Su Mei instead.

Su Mei had just finished cooking the last dish and brought it out. She could hear Su Hong yelling for her and could sense that they had argued and quickly walked over.

She noticed that everyone was standing and didn't look too kindly at each other. Lin Wen even looked clearly angry.

Her heart sank.

What happened?

"Su Mei, you're here! You tell me - Xu Ran is your own nephew, and he calls you his Third Aunt!" Su Hong started angrily, "I just want him to work in Lin Group and asked Lin Wen to arrange for a position for him. What's wrong with that? Why can't I do that?"

"You mean you won't do us this little favor even though our families are so closely tied to one another?"

Su Hong had now become the most pitiful one among them. "When you were a child, do you still

remember how I took care of you and helped you? Now that the Lin family has become powerful again, you don't even want to do me a favor? You're repaying evil for good!"

"You even dare to say that we're repaying evil for good?" Lin Wen shook his head and was losing his patience quickly.

If Grandma Su weren't here, he would have gotten Number 3 to chase this family out by now.

"I'm not talking to you!" Su Hong pulled on Su Mei's arm. "Su Mei, I won't say too much, I'll just ask you one question. Is there any problem if Xu Ran joins Lin Group as a VP?"

The Lin family listened to everything Su Mei said.

No matter how firm Lin Wen looked, he would never go against anything Su Mei said, and Su Hong knew about this.

As long as Su Mei gave the go ahead, Lin Wen could forget about refusing her demands.

"A VP?" Su Mei was stunned by this request. Was her sister joking?

She knew very well how capable Xu Ran really was. He was that sort of person who was fired by an ordinary company for being too lazy. So there was no way he was capable of getting into Lin Group.

With his results and his work experience, he probably couldn't even submit his resume.

"What are you talking about?" Su Mei frowned slightly. "Lin Group's hiring process is very strict and they have very high standards when it comes to

ability."

"Just give him a useless position then!" Su Hong shrieked. "Just give him a position that doesn't really need to do anything, then it'll be fine!"

The entire room was shocked.

Yang Li couldn't stand it and muttered under her breath, "What a shameless request!"

She wanted a position for her son where he didn't have to do anything and still be treated as a VP?

Did Su Hong think that the Lin family belonged to her?

"Mum! Say something!" Su Hong immediately started tugging at her mother when Su Mei remained silent.

"Mei, the Lin family is doing so well now, so it'll be nice if the siblings could all help one another wherever possible. It's not difficult to arrange for a job, is it?" Grandma Su said very gravely. "Xu Ran is all grown up now, so if there are some things that he can't do, then forget it. You can always find him a position where he doesn't have to do much, Lin Group isn't going to collapse just because of that anyway."

Su Hong was smug when she heard these words.

She knew that Su Mei couldn't refuse her mother at all.

Su Mei looked at her mother and really didn't want to agree with her.

She never asked about the company and left all the

decisions to Lin Wen and Lin Yuzhen. She looked at Lin Wen but he didn't say anything. Grandma Su was clearly asking Su Mei, so it was difficult for him to respond on her behalf.

But of course, the word NO was written all over his face.

There was no way he would agree to this.

Su Mei was put in a spot. If she refused, then her mother would be upset and Su Hong's family would bear a grudge against her.

But if she agreed, then how was she going to persuade Lin Wen?

It did sound like arranging for a position and giving out one person's salary wasn't anything very difficult to do.

She moved her lips and hesitated for a while. She noticed everyone looking at her and wondered if Lin Group could just arrange for a low position for Xu Ran, since a VP was definitely impossible. But would Su Hong's family be satisfied if the position was too low?

Lin Wen sighed in his heart when he could see that Su Mei was going to give in.

Everything about his wife was wonderful, but she was too softhearted and she would never go against what her mother said.

THUD!

Just when Su Mei was about to agree, Jiang Ning suddenly staggered two steps back and collapsed onto the sofa as he clutched his head.

"Jiang Ning! Jiang Ning! What's wrong?" Lin Wen immediately got a terrible shock.

Su Mei became even more anxious. "Jiang Ning, are you feeling unwell?"

"No I'm fine, maybe I'm just too tired," Jiang Ning shook his head slowly and looked completely exhausted. "When those people were running after me that day, one of them struck my head with a stick, and now I'm suddenly feeling a little dizzy."

When Su Mei heard this, she felt her body shudder. Her heart went out to him and her eyes teared up immediately.



Rate the Translation to Get 2 Pearls.



Wait! I Have Something to Say!



Send a Gift to the Writer!